

# LIFE AFTER WAR CHARACTER GUIDE 2

**BOOKS 11-22**



## ANGELA WHITE

**Copyright**  
**LAW Character Guide**

Volume Two  
**Books 11-20**

**Length:** 636 pages

**First Edition:** 2024

**Author:** Angela White

**Copyright** ©Angela White. All rights reserved worldwide. No part of this publication may be replicated, redistributed, or given away in any form without prior written consent.

Thank you to my wonderful Beta readers (Drew, Crystal, Terry, Wendy, Holly, Joe, John, Jackie, Sue, Jacqueline, Kristi, Mattie, Karen, and Jerry.) who always come through for me. I adore you all.

# Table of Contents

<a href="#"><u>Characters Named A...</u></a>
<a href="#"><u>Characters Named B...</u></a>
<a href="#"><u>Characters Named C...</u></a>
<a href="#"><u>Characters Named D...</u></a>
<a href="#"><u>Characters Named E...</u></a>
<a href="#"><u>Characters Named F...</u></a>
<a href="#"><u>Characters Named G...</u></a>
<a href="#"><u>Characters Named H...</u></a>
<a href="#"><u>Characters Named I...</u></a>
<a href="#"><u>Characters Named J...</u></a>
<a href="#"><u>Characters Named K...</u></a>
<a href="#"><u>Characters Named L...</u></a>
<a href="#"><u>Characters Named M...</u></a>
<a href="#"><u>Characters Named N...</u></a>
<a href="#"><u>Characters Named O...</u></a>
<a href="#"><u>Characters Named P...</u></a>
<a href="#"><u>Characters Named Q...</u></a>
<a href="#"><u>Characters Named R...</u></a>
<a href="#"><u>Characters Named S...</u></a>
<a href="#"><u>Characters Named T...</u></a>
<a href="#"><u>Characters Named U...</u></a>
<a href="#"><u>Characters Named V...</u></a>
<a href="#"><u>Characters Named W...</u></a>
<a href="#"><u>Characters Named X...</u></a>
<a href="#"><u>Characters Named Y...</u></a>
<a href="#"><u>Characters Named Z...</u></a>
<a href="#"><u>Characters by Book</u></a>
<a href="#"><u>Timeline Recap by Book</u></a>

# Foreword

The easiest way to use this book is to click on the letters in the TOC. You can also scroll through until you find the name you're looking for. If you want to see which book the character started from, there is a list of all the characters, arranged by book, at the very end.

The numbers next to some of the names tell how many times that name, or a version of it, has been used. The higher the number, the higher the odds that it's under the name curse.

The last 200 pages of this book contain the complete and detailed recap and timeline of the entire Life After War series, arranged by book and date!

A



## Albert

**Height:** 6’.

**Weight:** 150 lbs.

**Eyes:** Brown.

**Hair:** Brown.

**Age:** 30s.

**First appearance:** Albert’s first appearance is in book #12 when William comes to the beach to mourn Safe Haven. Albert and his family are also there, hoping for that special camp to return.

**Memorable quote:** “Thank you.” Albert motioned to his wife, who was coming toward them. “We can only pay with my body or hers.”

**Family:** Wife: Dina. Daughter: Lorna.

**Home:** Mississippi.

**Occupation before the War:** Computer repairman.

**Occupation after the War:** Unemployed.

**Safe Haven Status:** Never a member.

**Descendant Status:** Normal.

**Relationship Status:** Married to Dina.

**Death:** Albert was killed in book #12 when William snapped and murdered all of the refugees on the beach.

**Notes:** Albert didn’t have much in the way of survival skills, but he loved his wife and daughter deeply. He hid his family for the first six months after the war, which made them miss joining Safe Haven back before the camp stopped taking in new

refugees. That was Albert's biggest regret even as he was burning alive.

---

## Albert #2

**Height:** 6’.

**Weight:** 165 lbs.

**Eyes:** Blue.

**Hair:** Blond.

**Age:** 30s.

**First appearance:** Albert’s first appearance is in book #16 when he and Denese are manning the controls of Director Haussler’s UN command ship.

**Memorable quote:** Albert shook his head, thin frame tensing. “I’m sorry. She’s an outcast. I didn’t think the rules applied to her.”

**Family:** No known family alive.

**Home:** Australia.

**Occupation before the War:** UN sailor.

**Occupation after the War:** UN sailor and secret member of A.R.F. The Australian Resistance Force.

**Safe Haven Status:** Never a member.

**Descendant Status:** Tracker.

**Relationship Status:** Single.

**Death:** Albert was shot in the back in book #18 by Goldie.

**Notes:** Albert didn’t want to die. He believed in the resistance force, but deep down, he doubted the UN would ever be defeated. He stayed at his job because he knew he couldn’t survive on the run.

---



## Alexander Mitchel

**Height:** 6’.

**Weight:** 185 lbs.

**Eyes:** Blue.

**Hair:** Blond.

**Age:** 64.

**First appearance:** Alexander’s first appearance is in book #13 when he’s on guard duty over Cate Brady’s cell and Joey Livingston comes in to visit her.

**Memorable quote:** Alexander shrugged. “Personal issues.” He frowned at the boy with bright blue eyes under reddish blond curls. “Your father will be very upset with you.”

**Family:** Brothers: Brandon, Levi, Adrian, Abraham, others. Nephews: Conner, Bret, Elliot, Asher, Austin, others. Niece: Alexa. No children of his own.

**Home:** Little Rock.

**Occupation before the War:** UN thinker.

**Occupation after the War:** UN staff member at the IDC.

**Safe Haven Status:** Never a member.

**Descendant Status:** Beta. Mentalist, but weak. Only a shield gift.

**Relationship Status:** Widowed.

**Death:** Alexander was killed in book #13 in the escape pod by Greg crushing his throat. Greg was

also stabbed and should have died, too. Drew saved his life and gave his own.

**Notes:** Alexander didn't have any kids because he didn't want to continue the family legacy of popping out offspring who were mentally unstable. He did love his wife, however. Finding out she had an affair with Adrian cemented a lifelong hatred that was still in full effect upon his death. His wife's body was never found. I think he fed her to their dogs.

---

## Alfonso

**Height:** 6’.

**Weight:** 175 lbs.

**Eyes:** Brown.

**Hair:** Blond.

**Age:** 31.

**First appearance:** Alfonso’s first appearance is in book #19 on Howland Island when his body is discovered. He was rescued from Reicher’s lab in book #18.

**Memorable quote:** No speaking lines.

**Family:** No known family alive.

**Home:** Australia.

**Occupation before the War:** Scroll diver in Reicher’s lab.

**Occupation after the War:** Unemployed.

**Safe Haven Status:** Never a member.

**Descendant Status:** Tracker.

**Relationship Status:** Single.

**Death:** Alfonso was murdered in book #19. Goldie stabbed him in the back while the mission men were sleeping on Howland Island. Goldie was afraid he would tell Angela about his new obsession with Isabel.

**Notes:** Alfonso was one of the military men Kenn tried to save. Alfonso loved his job in the lab; he loathed Reicher.

---

## Alicia Mitchel

**Height:** 4’.

**Weight:** 40 lbs.

**Eyes:** Brown.

**Hair:** Blonde.

**Age:** 5.

**First appearance:** Alicia’s first appearance is in book #22 when the town is walking through the tunnels during the fire bugout. She is helping her mother enforce the peace.

**Memorable quote:** “Is it okay to enjoy those moments?”

**Family:** Father: Roger Mitchel. Mother: Amanda. Sibling: Margret. Uncle: Adrian. Related to all of the other Mitchels.

**Home:** South Dakota.

**Occupation after the War:** Enforcer in training.

**Safe Haven Status:** Tolerated camp member.

**Descendant Status:** Enforcer.

**Death:** Still alive as of book #22.

**Notes:** Alicia was conceived from a rape. As a result, she has no conscience, like her father. She is being sent away for special training to keep her from becoming evil.

---

## Amanda Mitchel

**Height:** 5'8".

**Weight:** 145 lbs.

**Eyes:** Blue.

**Hair:** Blonde braids.

**Age:** 51.

**First appearance:** Amanda's first appearance is in book #22 when we find out she's a Mitchel, and she's been with Safe Haven since South Dakota.

**Memorable quote:** "I'm afraid I'll turn out like the rest of your damn army. I'll want it more than anything else you can hit me with."

**Family:** Brothers: Adrian, Levi, Alexander, Abraham, others. Niece: Alexa. Nephews: Conner, Bret, Elliot, Asher, Austin, others. Two daughters: Alicia, with Roger Mitchel. Margret, with Somchai Abbot.

**Home:** South Dakota.

**Occupation before the War:** Family enforcer.

**Occupation after the War:** Safe Haven's new enforcer.

**Safe Haven Status:** Respected and feared member of camp.

**Descendant Status:** Alpha. Enforcer.

**Relationship Status:** Single.

**Death:** Still alive as of book #22.

**Notes:** Amanda doesn't want to fight anymore. She hates being an enforcer and hurting people. Inside, she's a kind-hearted woman who loathes the legacy

of her family. But that won't stop her from acting like them if she feels it's called for. Alexa Mitchel saved Amanda's life with a long-ago warning to hide and she did that, but Angela isn't going to let her keep doing it. Angela is going to use Amanda for the greater good, whether she wants that or not.

---

## Amber

**Height:** 3'.

**Weight:** 35 lbs.

**Eyes:** Green.

**Hair:** Red.

**Age:** 4.

**First appearance:** Amber's first and only mention is in book #12 when Marc is filling out his report on the deaths they had that day.

**Memorable quote:** No speaking lines.

**Family:** No known family alive.

**Home:** Georgia.

**Safe Haven Status:** Beloved camp member.

**Descendant Status:** Normal.

**Death:** Amber died in book #12 from the radiation sickness.

**Notes:** Amber was in foster care when the war came. She was the only survivor of the household. She hid in a cellar that was used to preserve food.

---

## Amira

**Height:** 5'5".

**Weight:** 125 lbs.

**Eyes:** Green.

**Hair:** Red.

**Age:** 20s.

**First appearance:** Amira's first appearance is when she reaches Pitcairn Island in the RIB in book #16.

**Memorable quote:** No speaking lines.

**Family:** No known family alive.

**Home:** Australia.

**Occupation before the War:** UN fighter.

**Occupation after the War:** UN fighter and member of A.R.F.

**Safe Haven Status:** Never a member.

**Descendant Status:** Tracker

**Relationship Status:** Single.

**Death:** Amira had been on the island for two weeks, moving around to avoid detection. She'd figured out she had to save Marc's life to get Angela's help. She was shot by Chad in book #16. He thought she was Marc.

**Notes:** Amira's companions were killed when Marc blew up the RIB they were on. He didn't know they were coming to make contact on behalf of the resistance force. They didn't know they should have made contact over the radio first. He assumed they were a threat and reacted accordingly. Amira felt it coming and dove off of the RIB before they got in



sight of the beach. Kendle knew there was a survivor and didn't tell anyone.

---

## Amos

**Height:** Average.

**Weight:** 130 lbs.

**Eyes:** Brown.

**Hair:** Brown.

**Age:** 28.

**First appearance:** Amos was with Safe Haven when they set sail from America. He had just been removed from the Eagles for failing the physical requirements. His first named appearance is in book #21 when Tim is hiding him and the other deserters in the cubby under the church bunkhouse.

**Memorable quote:** “We need raincoats, too, so we can go out without people knowing who we are.”

**Family:** Brother: Curtis.

**Home:** Georgia.

**Occupation before the War:** Unemployed.

**Occupation after the War:** Failed Eagle.

**Safe Haven Status:** No longer a member.

**Descendant Status:** Normal.

**Relationship Status:** Single.

**Death:** Amos was shot and killed by Tim at the end of book #21.

**Notes:** Amos left Safe Haven in a lifeboat in book #12, along with his brother. He quickly regretted that choice. He and the other survivors from that lifeboat made it to Pitcairn Island, where the leader of the church group, Tim, gave them sanctuary and hid them. Tired of waiting for a chance to earn his

way back in, Amos made a deal with Nature to kill  
Angela.

---

## André #3

**Height:** 5'11".

**Weight:** 175 lbs.

**Eyes:** Brown.

**Hair:** Bald.

**Age:** 30s.

**First appearance:** André's first appearance is in book #12 when his trap team tries to grab Cody and the other time-controlling kids from the cruise ship during the radiation sickness.

**Memorable quote:** "Get those twins. I'll get the Brady boy." André lifted his gun toward Kimmie. "Keep your power to yourself and no one will be hurt."

**Family:** No known family alive.

**Home:** Minnesota.

**Occupation before the War:** UN Hunter.

**Occupation after the War:** UN Hunter and trap team leader.

**Safe Haven Status:** Never a member.

**Descendant Status:** Normal.

**Relationship Status:** Widowed.

**Death:** André stepped across the threshold... He screamed, hands coming up. Blood dripped from his nose. He dropped to the carpet, blood gushing from his mouth like a fountain. The artwork the kids put up in book #12 worked a little too well.

**Notes:** André hated magic users, but not because he feared them. He wanted to be one. Upon successful

completion of this run, he was going to demand power as his reward. The UN knew. They were going to gift him with death instead.

---

## Anna Dormer

**Height:** 5'6".

**Weight:** 130 lbs.

**Eyes:** Brown.

**Hair:** Brown.

**Age:** 38.

**First appearance:** Anna's first mention is in book #13 when Jordi is telling Joel about the newest prisoners their trap team captured. Anna was one of them. Anna's first appearance is in book #13 when she and the others are watching from their cell in the International Detention Center as the pirates bring in more captives.

**Memorable quote:** *"We have to get out and warn people."*

**Family:** Husband: Tobias. Sister: Daniella.  
Pregnant by Harry.

**Home:** Mexico.

**Occupation before the War:** Escaped lab subject.

**Occupation after the War:** Rookie medical assistant. Former rookie cook.

**Safe Haven Status:** Respected camp member.

**Descendant Status:** Byzan. Naturalist.

**Relationship Status:** Widowed.

**Death:** Still alive as of book #22.

**Notes:** Anna's mental lock started rattling as soon as they reached Safe Haven. She was almost able to get free on her own, thanks to Harry. Harry had a wonderful way with women. It's too bad he couldn't

stop hunting power. I think he and Anna would have been very happy together.

---

## Ares

**Height:** Average.

**Weight:** Average.

**Eyes:** Green.

**Hair:** Red.

**Age:** 5,229.

**First appearance:** Ares's first appearance is in book #11 when Angela's team makes it to the level two angel area at the Weigh Station.

**Memorable quote:** "I am Ares, the defender."

**Family:** Four brothers: Leeto, Resus, Ercu, Nysus.

**Home:** The Weigh Station.

**Occupation before the War:** Prisoner, Weigher of souls.

**Occupation after the War:** Prisoner, Weigher of souls.

**Safe Haven Status:** Never a member.

**Descendant Status:** Byzan. Locked.

**Relationship Status:** Unknown.

**Death:** Ares was killed in book #12 when Angela and her team ascended and took over the Weigh Station. He was stabbed in the balls, the stomach, and then the eyes. The kids had to hit whatever area they could reach.

**Notes:** Ares's gold pin is an arrow. It means bloodthirsty.

Ares knew The Messenger was lying about there being a way out of their cloudy prison at the Weigh



Station and didn't tell the others. Even a false hope of freedom is better than none.

---

## Atlas

**Height:** Average.

**Weight:** Average.

**Eyes:** Blue.

**Hair:** Black.

**Age:** 5,490.

**First appearance:** Atlas's first appearance is in book #11 when Angela's team makes it to the level three area at the Weigh Station.

**Memorable quote:** Atlas blew out annoyance. "It was never about that. Adrian's ghost joined his mind decades before the war. We will banish it. In exchange, he will remain here when the rest of you return."

**Family:** Four brothers: Kronus, Cean, Pimet, Romi.

**Home:** The Weigh Station.

**Occupation before the War:** Weigher of souls.

**Occupation after the War:** Weigher of souls.

**Safe Haven Status:** Never a member.

**Descendant Status:** Byzan. Locked.

**Relationship Status:** Unknown.

**Death:** Atlas was killed in book #12 when Angela and her team ascended and took over the Weigh Station. He was smothered by a group of the kids.

**Notes:** Atlas's gold pin is a globe. It means poisoner.

---

## Azeez

**Height:** Average.

**Weight:** Average.

**Eyes:** Brown.

**Hair:** Brown.

**Age:** 5,383.

**First appearance:** Azeez's first appearance is in book #11 when Angela's group goes to the Weigh Station. He is in the first room where the lowest ranked angels live and work.

**Memorable quote:** "It must be hard on you to not know where she is, what's happening to her, if she's even alive. You must be curious if we've weighed her soul yet."

**Family:** Four brothers: Itis, Orin, Laistry, Teus.

**Home:** The Weigh Station.

**Occupation before the War:** Weigher of souls.

**Occupation after the War:** Weigher of souls.

**Safe Haven Status:** Never a member.

**Descendant Status:** Byzan. Locked.

**Relationship Status:** Unknown.

**Death:** Azeez died in book #12 when Angela and her team ascended and took over the Weigh Station. Angela burned him alive with her hatred.

**Notes:** Azeez's gold pin is a crown. It means power hunter.

---

B

---

## Bernice

**Height:** 5'6".

**Weight:** 125 lbs.

**Eyes:** Brown.

**Hair:** Black.

**Age:** 30s.

**Other:** Beautiful dark skin.

**First appearance:** Bernice's first appearance is in book #13 when Ian spots her and her daughter in a floating rubble pile near the Cayman Islands.

**Memorable quote:** "We split up to avoid capture when they came in after us. Another hundred died of exposure, thirst, starvation, injuries." She shuddered. "Never trust the UN."

**Family:** Daughter: Crissy.

**Home:** The Cayman Islands.

**Occupation before the War:** Seamstress.

**Occupation after the War:** Unemployed.

**Safe Haven Status:** Respected camp member.

**Descendant Status:** Water hybrid. Nothing is known about this type of descendant yet. More will be revealed on it in later books as leadership digs into that new mystery. For now, I can tell you water hybrid are a cross between normals and the Ocean King's line. It wasn't just the angels who decided to mate with a human.

**Relationship Status:** Dating Gus.

**Death:** Still alive as of book #22.

**Notes:** Bernice has spent her life hiding who she is, while trying to find a way to get rid of the hybrid DNA in her family line. She hates being different. I hope Angela can show her how to be proud of herself instead of always hating the other half. I'm sure Gus will help her with that, too.

---

## Biff

**Also known as:** The Conjuror.

**Height:** 6’.

**Weight:** 225 lbs.

**Eyes:** Blue.

**Hair:** Blond curls.

**Age:** Late 20s.

**First appearance:** Biff’s first appearance is in book #15 when he is on protection duty over Monica while she clears the barn in the main town on Pitcairn right after they reach the island.

**Memorable quote:** Biff scanned the cliff, wishing they could see the road. “Quinn wants Kendle the way you want Angela. He hides it better. He’s more dangerous than you’re giving him credit for.”

**Family:** No known family alive.

**Home:** Kentucky.

**Occupation before the War:** College student.

**Occupation after the War:** Level two Eagle on Marc’s team.

**Safe Haven Status:** Respected camp member.

**Descendant Status:** Mentalist. Conjuror.

**Relationship Status:** Was in Love with Sabrina, who died from the radiation sickness in book #12. Is now slightly obsessed with Madison.

**Death:** Still alive as of book #22.

**Notes:** Biff started out as a very quiet, almost shy rookie and became very important to the camp and to the future. Conjuring is a rare skill. It’s too bad

that Biff's mind is cracking. Everything he went through in Reicher's lab is starting to catch up to him.

---



## Blair

**Height:** 6'.

**Weight:** 185 lbs.

**Eyes:** Green.

**Hair:** Blond.

**Age:** 30s.

**First appearance:** Blair's first appearance is in book #12 when the UN trap team let Kronus out of the brig on the cruise ship. He is a fighter on that team.

**Memorable quote:** No speaking lines.

**Family:** No known family alive.

**Home:** Denver.

**Occupation before the War:** UN fighter.

**Occupation after the War:** Trap team member.

**Safe Haven Status:** Never a member.

**Descendant Status:** Normal.

**Relationship Status:** Single.

**Death:** Blair was killed in book #12 when Kronus took his lifeforce. He was found days later stuffed in a closet on the cruise ship.

**Notes:** Blair had never been anything more than a low level worker all of his life. He did a solid job at the chores he was given, but he had no ambition to become more. He was perfect as far as the UN was concerned.

---

## Blake

**Height:** Average.

**Weight:** Average.

**Eyes:** Brown.

**Hair:** Brown.

**Age:** 30s.

**First appearance:** Blake's first appearance is in book #11 when he's calling on the radio to report Amy being missing.

**Memorable quote:** "Aren't comets harbingers of doom?"

**Family:** No known family alive.

**Home:** Oklahoma.

**Occupation before the War:** Unemployed.

**Occupation after the War:** Fishing crew and rookie Eagle.

**Safe Haven Status:** Tolerated member of camp.

**Descendant Status:** Normal.

**Relationship Status:** Single.

**Death:** Blake was killed in book #12 when he and the other deserters came back and tried to take over the cruise ship. Molly and Adrian shot him at the same time.

**Notes:** Blake left the cruise ship in a lifeboat because he was afraid to catch the radiation sickness and die. If he'd stayed gone, the odds might have been better.

---

## Bo Abbot

**Height:** Average.

**Weight:** Average.

**Eyes:** Brown.

**Hair:** Brown.

**Age:** 15.

**First appearance:** Bo's first appearance is in book #14 when he and the other fugitives are hiding from Chuck's men while waiting for a Safe Haven rescue in Port Stanley.

**Memorable quote:** "Yuck!" Bo was also catching some of the thoughts. "Not interested!"

**Family:** Father: Somchai. Mother: Rosetta.

**Home:** South America.

**Occupation before the War:** Unemployed.

**Occupation after the War:** Unemployed.

**Safe Haven Status:** Tolerated member of camp.

**Descendant Status:** Animaler.

**Relationship Status:** Single.

**Death:** Bo was killed in book #22 when he and his father decided to kidnap Marc and Angela's newborn daughter. Marc took Bo's lifeforce.

**Notes:** Bo was warped by his father's constant hatred of anyone who wasn't an Abbot. Bo was banished alongside his father because his mother didn't want him. Bo was sickly upon birth and his mother had no time for that. I feel bad for Bo. It seems like he never stood a chance at being good or

being happy. I also didn't like him because he's an Abbot. None of them have been good so far.

---

## Bob #6

**Height:** 6'1".

**Weight:** 175 lbs.

**Eyes:** Green.

**Hair:** Brown.

**Age:** 40s.

**First appearance:** Bob's first appearance is in book #13 when he confronts Marc with a bottle in one hand and a gun in the other. He is grieving the death of his daughter, who passed from the radiation sickness.

**Memorable quote:** Bob stared stupidly. "Talk? I don't want to talk to you. I want you dead!"

**Family:** No known family alive.

**Home:** Lansing.

**Occupation before the War:** Brick layer.

**Occupation after the War:** Unemployed.

**Safe Haven Status:** Respected camp member.

**Descendant Status:** Normal.

**Relationship Status:** Widowed.

**Death:** Bob was shot and killed by Ray in book #13 when he came into the bridge with a knife, looking for Angela.

**Notes:** Bob's flip after the loss of his daughter wasn't surprising. With so much going on, Angela didn't have time to offer him grief counseling, but even if she had, I doubt it would have worked. Bob loved that little girl more than his own life.

---

## **Bobby Jean**

**Height:** 5'11".

**Weight:** 165 lbs.

**Eyes:** Green.

**Hair:** Brown.

**Age:** 40s.

**First appearance:** Bobby Jean's first appearance is in book #12 when the camp normals are on the verge of rioting. He is one of the people demanding to be let off of the cruise ship.

**Memorable quote:** "We're going back to the UN ship." Bobby Jean sneered. "We can sail that, without magic users."

**Family:** No known family alive.

**Home:** Iowa.

**Occupation before the War:** Thief.

**Occupation after the War:** Unemployed.

**Safe Haven Status:** Tolerated member of camp.

**Descendant Status:** Normal.

**Relationship Status:** Single.

**Death:** Bobby Jean died in book #12 when he left in a lifeboat with the other deserters. They had hoped to take the abandoned UN ship back to land, but the Eagle team going to the International Detention Center had already reclaimed that ship. Bobby Jean died of drowning when he fell overboard and couldn't stay awake after two days.

**Notes:** Bobby Jean hated being in Safe Haven. It was hard to steal with the Eagles always watching everything.

---

## Boris

**Height:** 6'1".

**Weight:** 190 lbs.

**Eyes:** Green.

**Hair:** Black.

**Age:** 30s.

**First appearance:** Boris's first appearance is in book #12 when he and his trap team are waiting at the warehouse by the shore for Angela to trade herself for their captive.

**Memorable quote:** Boris stared at the feasting sharks. "*We just lost a descendant. The UN will kill us all.*"

**Family:** No known family alive.

**Home:** Missouri.

**Occupation before the War:** UN hunter.

**Occupation after the War:** Trap team fighter.

**Safe Haven Status:** Never a member.

**Descendant Status:** Normal.

**Relationship Status:** Single.

**Death:** Boris was killed in book #12. Kurt shot him by accident while trying to kill Kendle.

**Notes:** Boris was best friends with Kurt. That was the only friendship he'd ever had.

---



## **Boutros**

**Height:** 5'11".

**Weight:** 200 lbs.

**Eyes:** Brown.

**Hair:** Red.

**Age:** 40s.

**First appearance:** Boutros's first appearance is in book #12 when he and his trap team are waiting at the warehouse by the shore for Angela to trade herself for their captive.

**Memorable quote:** No speaking lines.

**Family:** No known family alive.

**Home:** France.

**Occupation before the War:** UN hunter.

**Occupation after the War:** Trap team fighter.

**Safe Haven Status:** Never a member.

**Descendant Status:** Normal.

**Relationship Status:** Single.

**Death:** Boutros was killed in book #12 when Kendle pulled him off of the dock and released him into a frenzy of sharks.

**Notes:** Not much is known about Boutros. I think he joined the UN because he had hope for the future. He didn't know his faith in that organization was misplaced.

---

## Bret Mitchel

**Height:** 5'4".

**Weight:** 125 lbs.

**Eyes:** Blue.

**Hair:** Blond.

**Age:** 12.

**First appearance:** Bret's first named appearance is in book #19 when he helps Isabel. Bret hits Goldie in the back of the head and knocks him out before the man can hurt Isabel again. Bret was rescued from Reicher's lab in book #18.

**Memorable quote:** "Why do you tolerate their disrespect and rebellious behavior? You're the boss. You don't have the same rules."

**Family:** Father: Adrian. Stepsister: Alexa. Stepbrothers: Conner, Elliot, Asher, Austin, others. Uncles: Brandon, Levi, Alexander, Abraham, Roger, others. And many, many more.

**Home:** Australia.

**Safe Haven Status:** New member.

**Descendant Status:** Tracker/mentalist hybrid. Hybrids are only 2% of the magical population. Very few descendants are willing to share their gifts in any form. Most hybrids do not have a specific type even if they only picked one gift. Most hybrids die young, as their demons try to take over.

**Death:** Still alive as of book #22.

**Notes:** Bret is one of those few souls who couldn't be corrupted in the lab. Now that he's out and

enjoying his life in Safe Haven, I hope that stays true. However, real life can be just as hard as a lab. It pushes us to our breaking point quite often. We'll have to wait and see what happens when life shoves Bret. After all, he is a Mitchel.

---

## Brian #2

**Height:** Average.

**Weight:** Average.

**Eyes:** Green.

**Hair:** Brown.

**Age:** 30s.

**First appearance:** Brian's first mention is in book #11 in the list of Eagles and crews. Brian's first appearance is in book #12 in the mess as they're being locked down.

**Memorable quote:** Brian stepped forward, rigid with anger and fear. "You shut your mouth!"

**Family:** No known family alive.

**Home:** Ciemus.

**Occupation before the War:** Fisherman.

**Occupation after the War:** Boat crew member and rookie Eagle.

**Safe Haven Status:** Tolerated camp member.

**Descendant Status:** Normal.

**Relationship Status:** Single.

**Death:** Brian was shot and killed by Tonya in book #12 when he went on a shooting spree. He was trying to kill Brittani.

**Notes:** Brittani punched Brian while they were in the mess and damaged his ego so badly that the only way he felt he could recover was to kill her. He was already mentally unstable, clearly. He also had a drinking problem. He was known as the camp

drunk. Sadly, he killed Zoey and Katie during that shooting spree.

---



C

---

## Candy's Twins

**Height:** 16 inches.

**Weight:** 5 lbs.

**Eyes:** Brown.

**Hair:** Brown.

**Age:** 3 ½ months.

**Birthday:** March 21<sup>st</sup>.

**First appearance:** Candy's daughters were born in book #17 on the same day Samantha was kidnapped by Chad.

**Memorable quote:** No speaking lines yet.

**Family:** Mother: Candy. Father: Lee. Stepfather: Conner.

**Home:** Safe Haven.

**Safe Haven Status:** Cherished camp members.

**Descendant Status:** Normal.

**Death:** Still alive as of book #22.

**Notes:** During the birth, the medics discovered Candy had breast cancer. She was still able to breastfeed both girls, giving them a nice jumpstart to make up for their low birth weight.

---

## Cassie

**Height:** 5'5".

**Weight:** 130 lbs.

**Eyes:** Green.

**Hair:** Brown.

**Age:** 21.

**First appearance:** Cassie's first and only mention is in book #12 when Marc is filling out his report on the deaths they had that day.

**Memorable quote:** No speaking lines.

**Family:** No known family alive.

**Home:** Oregon.

**Occupation before the War:** Mechanic assistant.

**Occupation after the War:** Unemployed.

**Safe Haven Status:** Respected camp member.

**Descendant Status:** Healer.

**Relationship Status:** Single.

**Death:** Cassie died in book #12 from the radiation sickness.

**Notes:** Cassie's gifts had just come in. She kept trying to use them to save herself, but it didn't work. Descendants are not able to heal themselves.

---



## Cate Brady

**Height:** 4'5".

**Weight:** 70 lbs.

**Eyes:** Blue.

**Hair:** Black.

**Age:** 10.

**First appearance:** Cate's first mention is in book #11, when Marc finds out he has a missing daughter. Cate's first appearance is in book #13 when Jordi opens her cell for a session at the International Detention Center.

**Memorable quote:** Cate snorted, staying still until the gas had covered her from view. She slowly walked back to her cell, fists clenched. "That's the last time you play with me; I am not your friend."

**Family:** Grandfather: Reicher. Great uncle: Rico. Father: Marc. Mother: Julia. Twin brother: Cody. Step siblings: Charlie, Karleen. Adoptive siblings: Mike and Mia. Nephew: Mathew.

**Home:** Idaho.

**Safe Haven Status:** Cherished member of camp.

**Descendant Status:** Alpha. Tracker. Trackers make up 10% of the magical population. Their job is to find fugitive descendants. Top level trackers can penetrate dirt and water. Their grids can stretch over a mile, though it is a serious energy drain.

She also has an alpha death spell that Jordi spent a year trying to get her to use so she would become corrupt and evolve time controlling gifts.

**Death:** Still alive as of book #22.

**Notes:** Cate misses her life in the lab. The mental torture she went through convinced her that home is only good when there's pain. Marc and Angela are trying to get her over that, but I suspect being held hostage in Hell by Joey is going to do more toward that goal than her parents ever could.

---

## Cayman King

**Also known as:** Kurt.

**Height:** 6’.

**Weight:** 200 lbs.

**Eyes:** Brown.

**Hair:** Brown.

**Age:** 31.

**First appearance:** Kurt’s first appearance is in book #12 when he and his trap team are waiting at the warehouse by the shore for Angela to trade herself for their captive.

**Memorable quote:** “You, of course.” Kurt waved at the leaving cruise ship. “All of you. My men are taking over your ship as we speak.”

**Family:** No known family alive.

**Home:** Missouri.

**Occupation before the War:** UN trainer.

**Occupation after the War:** Trap team leader.

**Safe Haven Status:** Never a member.

**Descendant Status:** Normal.

**Relationship Status:** Single.

**Death:** Kurt was killed in book #12 by his own gunshot when it bounced off of Kendle’s shield.

**Notes:** Kurt was sure that he could bring in Angela and drown Adrian without suffering a scratch to any of his teammates. He’d spent weeks reading the files on both powerful targets. He was confident that he had it covered. Lol.

---

## Cean

**Height:** Average.

**Weight:** Average.

**Eyes:** Blue.

**Hair:** Black.

**Age:** 5,422.

**First appearance:** Cean's first appearance is in book #11 when Angela's team makes it to the level three area at the Weigh Station.

**Memorable quote:** "I will tell you the future of your family if you abandon your leader and return now."

**Family:** Four brothers: Kronus, Atlas, Pimet, Romi.

**Home:** The Weigh Station.

**Occupation before the War:** Weigher of souls.

**Occupation after the War:** Weigher of souls.

**Safe Haven Status:** Never a member.

**Descendant Status:** Byzan. Locked.

**Relationship Status:** Unknown.

**Death:** Cean was killed in book #12 when Angela and her team ascended and took over the Weigh Station. He was disemboweled, shot, and burnt alive. He was harder to kill than the others.

**Notes:** Cean's gold pin is a wave. It means drowned.

---

## Cecilia #2

**Height:** 4'.

**Weight:** 100 lbs.

**Eyes:** Brown.

**Hair:** Red.

**Age:** 11.

**First appearance:** Cecilia's first and only mention is in book #12 when Marc is filling out his report on the deaths they had that day.

**Memorable quote:** No speaking lines.

**Family:** No known family alive.

**Home:** Kansas.

**Safe Haven Status:** Loved camp member.

**Descendant Status:** Normal.

**Death:** Cecilia died in book #12 from the radiation sickness.

**Notes:** Cecilia loved growing things. She spent hours every day with her mother at their family florist shop, learning how to grow flowers and arrange them. Her favorite color was purple.

---

## Cerise Bunting

**Also known as:** The Bloody Dog.

**Height:** 5'7".

**Weight:** 145 lbs.

**Eyes:** Brown.

**Hair:** Short, auburn.

**Age:** 40s.

**First appearance:** Cerise's first appearance is in book #16 when she and Miles are talking about the UN invasion plan.

**Memorable quote:** "Touché. My apologies, Assistant Director Silverman. But I'm not wrong. I know how many children I've birthed. I was there."

**Family:** Brother-in-law: Goldie. Pregnant by Reicher.

**Home:** Australia.

**Occupation before the War:** Member of the UN forces and breeder in the lab. She was also a tracker who brought in other descendants for the lab to experiment on.

**Occupation after the War:** Breeder in Reicher's lab and secret member of A.R.F.

**Safe Haven Status:** Never a member.

**Descendant Status:** Alpha. Byzan. Tracker.

**Relationship Status:** Engaged to Reicher.

**Death:** Cerise was killed in book #18 by Gus. He stabbed her in the chest.

**Notes:** Cerise was marked by Adrian decades ago for being a traitor. She had the long red claw mark

down her arm to prove it. The blue cloak was a gift from her late husband. It was the only memento she had left from their life together.

Cerise was called the bloody Dog because she loved killing. Only a few people knew she targeted the UN and lab employees harder than anyone else, always trying to give her side a fighting chance even though it looked like she just had no tolerance for liars and cheaters. Her only real desire was to accomplish the reset and bring back her happy family. Deep down, she wasn't a bad guy. She also wasn't a good guy. She was human.

---

# Chad

**Height:** 6’.

**Weight:** 170 lbs.

**Eyes:** Green.

**Hair:** Blond.

**Age:** 40s.

**First appearance:** Chad’s first appearance is in book #15 when he is on protection duty over Monica while she clears the barn in the main town on Pitcairn Island right after they arrive.

**Memorable quote:** Chad studied her in glee. “It’s almost time. Start gathering energy, and remember what I told you while I was breaking those three fingers, Sam. If you hold back at all, if you protect them in any way, I’ll shoot an entire magazine into this diaper bag.” Chad rested his free hand on it.

**Family:** No known family alive.

**Home:** Utah.

**Occupation before the War:** Navy SEAL.

**Occupation after the War:** Rookie Eagle, Lurker.

**Safe Haven Status:** Respected camp member.

**Descendant Status:** Invisible.

**Relationship Status:** Single.

**Death:** Chad was killed at the end of book #17 after he kidnapped Samantha and hurt her for killing his father. He was disemboweled, with bullets, by Neil.

**Notes:** Chad was a lurker, biding his time to get revenge. Chad’s skills as a lurker have influenced Mike, Zack’s son, in an awful way. Mike plans to



follow in Chad's footsteps. His target hasn't been revealed yet.

---

## Christian #5

**Height:** Average.

**Weight:** Average.

**Eyes:** Green.

**Hair:** Blond.

**Age:** 20s.

**First appearance:** Christian's first appearance is in book #15 when he is helping Marc clear the island. He is the medic who sedates the first grounder they have contact with.

**Memorable quote:** Christian stared at him, half a smile curving his lips. "Vine attack? Really?"

**Family:** No known family alive.

**Home:** North Dakota.

**Occupation before the War:** Dental student.

**Occupation after the War:** Rookie Eagle and medic on Marc's team.

**Safe Haven Status:** Respected camp member.

**Descendant Status:** Normal.

**Relationship Status:** Single.

**Death:** Christian died in book #15. While they were clearing the tunnels, a wounded grounder pulled Christian down and cracked his ribs and back.

**Notes:** Christian's parents wanted him to be a dentist like they were. They refused to pay for any other schooling. Christian wanted to be a doctor. He worked at a pizza shop to earn money to pay for what his student loans wouldn't cover. Considering

that being a medic got him killed, I can't help but wonder if his parents were right.

---

## Chuck Abbot

**Height:** 6’.

**Weight:** 190 lbs.

**Eyes:** Green.

**Hair:** White.

**Age:** 60s.

**First appearance:** Chuck’s first mention is in book #14 when Marc scans Port Stanley for Trent, who has been kidnapped. He senses Chuck then. Chuck’s first appearance is when his men bring Renard to the village where he is living in book #14.

**Memorable quote:** “Redheads are fate’s wildcards. I need their blood and their lifeforces.”

**Family:** All the females in Port Stanley are carrying Chuck’s babies.

**Home:** South America.

**Occupation before the War:** Banished tracker.

**Occupation after the War:** New ruler of Port Stanley.

**Safe Haven Status:** Never a member.

**Descendant Status:** Tracker.

**Relationship Status:** Dating numerous females.

**Death:** Chuck was killed by Neil in book #14. Neil hit him with an anger spell and then a bullet.

**Notes:** Chuck was breeding children so he could return to South America and take over the compound he was banished from. It might still happen. He left more than three dozen pregnant females, all carrying evil that will have to have a

target. I assume Safe Haven will handle that, but it might fall to the few descendants still in South America.

---

## Chuck #2

**Height:** 6'1".

**Weight:** 200 lbs.

**Eyes:** Brown.

**Hair:** Brown.

**Age:** 40s.

**First appearance:** Chuck's first appearance is in book #12 when his trap team tries to grab Cody and the other time-controlling kids from the cruise ship during the radiation sickness.

**Memorable quote:** "Don't go in!" Chuck tried to reach André's arm. "It's a trap!"

**Family:** No known family alive.

**Home:** South America.

**Occupation before the War:** UN Hunter.

**Occupation after the War:** UN Hunter.

**Safe Haven Status:** Never a member.

**Descendant Status:** Tracker.

**Relationship Status:** Single.

**Death:** Chuck was killed in book #12 by Kimmie. She used a rage spell to keep him from taking Cody and the other kids who can control time.

**Notes:** Chuck loved his job. Working for the UN gave him everything he wanted. It allowed him to abuse people and not go to jail for it.

---

## Cindy

**Height:** 3'2".

**Weight:** 30 lbs.

**Eyes:** Blue.

**Hair:** Red spikes.

**Age:** 4.

**First appearance:** Cindy's first appearance is in book #12 when she is suffering from the radiation sickness.

**Memorable quote:** No speaking lines.

**Family:** No known family alive.

**Home:** Unknown.

**Safe Haven Status:** Loved camp member.

**Descendant Status:** Normal.

**Death:** Cindy died from the radiation sickness in book #12.

**Notes:** Cindy was found by the Eagles while they were gathering supplies to fill the cruise ship in book #10. She was in a doghouse, pretending to be a big red dog.

---

## Claire

**Height:** 5'9".

**Weight:** 160 lbs.

**Eyes:** Brown.

**Hair:** Brunette.

**Age:** 31.

**First appearance:** Claire's first appearance is in book #11 when Seth refuses to leave the room and five big Ciemus women escort him out. Claire is one of those women.

**Memorable quote:** "You'll make a good dad and your kids will be healthy, survivors."

**Family:** No known family alive.

**Home:** Ciemus.

**Occupation before the War:** Fisherwoman.

**Occupation after the War:** Fisherwoman.

**Safe Haven Status:** Respected camp member.

**Descendant Status:** Normal.

**Relationship Status:** Claire wanted Doug. She had just let him know she was interested before they both got sick.

**Death:** Claire died of the radiation sickness in book #12.

**Notes:** Claire went to the Weigh Station with Angela for the battle there, but her mind couldn't handle knowing they were fighting angels. She was sent back to her body and died. Angela picked Claire as a mate to stay with Doug, but she wasn't



his match. I believe that's because his match was  
Peggy and she was already gone.

---

## Clifford #2

**Height:** 6'.

**Weight:** 170 lbs.

**Eyes:** Blue.

**Hair:** Blond.

**Age:** 50s.

**First appearance:** Clifford's first appearance is in book #12 when the camp normals are on the verge of rioting. He's one of the people demanding to be let off of the cruise ship.

**Memorable quote:** No speaking lines.

**Family:** No known family alive.

**Home:** Tennessee.

**Occupation before the War:** Thief.

**Occupation after the War:** Unemployed.

**Safe Haven Status:** Tolerated member of camp.

**Descendant Status:** Normal.

**Relationship Status:** Single.

**Death:** Clifford died in book #13 when he and a group of normals try to take over the ship and remove the magic users from leadership. He was consumed.

**Notes:** Clifford came from a large family. After the war, he left them and traveled to the coast. He'd never seen the ocean. He made it into Safe Haven because it's a place of second chances. In time, Clifford might have recovered from his family's lack of respect for the law, but the fear of magic, of dying, was too strong for him to fight.

Clifford almost died in book #12, but he made a last-minute decision not to leave in a lifeboat with some of the other deserters. Even when the outbreak was over, he couldn't shake death from his shoulder.

---

## Copycat Killer

**Height:** 6’.

**Weight:** 200 lbs.

**Eyes:** Green.

**Hair:** Black.

**Age:** 30s.

**First appearance:** The Copycat’s first appearance is in book #14 when Samantha is using magic to help get the cruise ship back on a safe path after they lost power during a storm. He walks by without harming her.

**Memorable quote:** “You have nothing to fear from me. I promise to spare you. These culls have no place in the herd of humanity.” The footsteps moved away.

**Family:** No known family alive.

**Home:** Unknown.

**Occupation before the War:** Unemployed.

**Occupation after the War:** Unemployed.

**Safe Haven Status:** Tolerated member of camp.

**Descendant Status:** Normal.

**Relationship Status:** Single.

**Death:** The Copycat killer was removed by Jeff in book #14 upon Angela’s orders. Jeff snapped his neck and then disposed of the body in the incinerator.

**Notes:** The Copycat killer wanted to thin the herd to only the good people. He thought he was on a mission from God to remove all evil. I think his

mind snapped after seeing so much death and misery and not being able to get away from it. He'd gotten used to Adrian sheltering the camp from that awful truth.

---

## Corbin

**Height:** 6’.

**Weight:** 200 lbs.

**Eyes:** Blue.

**Hair:** Blond.

**Age:** 50s.

**First appearance:** Corbin’s first mention is in book #12 when a small group of soldiers in America come topside to test the ground, air, and water. Corbin is the leader who sent them up there.

**Memorable quote:** No speaking lines.

**Family:** Son: Paul.

**Home:** Hawaii.

**Occupation before the War:** US lab scientist.

**Occupation after the War:** Commander of the government bunker in Hawaii.

**Safe Haven Status:** Never a member.

**Descendant Status:** Firewalker.

**Relationship Status:** Widowed.

**Death:** Corbin was shot and killed in the Alexa’s Travels series by Paul, his son.

**Notes:** Corbin was engaged to Thalia, Reicher’s daughter. He planned to put her in his lab and see how much abuse she could take as one of the founding family lines.

---

## Corey

**Height:** 6’.

**Weight:** 175 lbs.

**Eyes:** Blue.

**Hair:** Brown.

**Age:** 30s.

**First appearance:** Corey’s first mention is in book #11 when Charlie and Tracy are discussing the new teams and crew lists. Corey is on the meal crew.

**Memorable quote:** “Where do I put her?!” Corey couldn’t help his panicked tone. “Gunshot!” Blood dripped unnoticed onto the filthy floor that would require multiple washings to see its original color again.

**Family:** No known family alive.

**Home:** Michigan.

**Occupation before the War:** Used car salesman.

**Occupation after the War:** Meal crew member and rookie Eagle.

**Safe Haven Status:** Tolerated member of camp.

**Descendant Status:** Normal.

**Relationship Status:** Single.

**Death:** Corey died in book #21 when Marc and Ray both opened fire on him. Corey was trying to kill them and take over Safe Haven then. He should have known it was a bad idea.

**Notes:** Corey’s mind started to snap when he carried Rose to the infirmary. She’d been shot. His own fear of death kicked in hard and made him insist on

getting off of the cruise ship. He and Martin got rid of many of the people who went with them in the lifeboat. Once they made it to Pitcairn Island, they didn't ask Angela to let them back in because of those deaths. They knew she never would have allowed them another chance after all the drownings, stranglings, and stabbings they delivered in the name of conserving supplies.

---



## Cris #6

**Height:** Average.

**Weight:** Average.

**Eyes:** Blue.

**Hair:** Brown.

**Age:** 53.

**First appearance:** Cris's first and only mention is in book #12 when Marc is filling out his report on the deaths they had that day.

**Memorable quote:** No speaking lines.

**Family:** No known family alive.

**Home:** Hawaii.

**Occupation before the War:** Bailiff in Los Angeles.

**Occupation after the War:** Unemployed.

**Safe Haven Status:** Respected camp member.

**Descendant Status:** Invisible.

**Relationship Status:** Widowed.

**Death:** Cris died in book #12 from the radiation sickness.

**Notes:** Cris was out of California on the day the bombs fell. He'd been sent to Vegas for a training conference. He joined Safe Haven in the same group as Tonya.

---

## Crissy #7

**Height:** 4'.

**Weight:** 50 lbs.

**Eyes:** Brown.

**Hair:** Black.

**Age:** 7.

**First appearance:** Crissy's first appearance is in book #13 when Ian spots her and her mother in a floating rubble pile near the Cayman Islands.

**Memorable quote:** Crissy laughed, hand pushing against his shield. "I like him."

**Family:** Mother: Bernice.

**Home:** The Cayman Islands.

**Safe Haven Status:** Loved camp member.

**Descendant Status:** Water hybrid.

**Death:** Still alive as of book #22.

**Notes:** Crissy doesn't hate who she is yet. I hope her mother's fears don't rub off on the girl. I also hope the new revelations about water hybrids will let the descendant kids start bonding with her. Safe Haven doesn't have many children now. We need them to become close so they can protect each other.

---

## Curtis

**Height:** Average.

**Weight:** 135 lbs.

**Eyes:** Brown.

**Hair:** Brown.

**Age:** 29.

**First appearance:** Curtis was with Safe Haven when they set sail from America. He had just been removed from the Eagles for failing the fighting and awareness tests. Curtis's first named appearance is in book #21 when Tim is hiding him in the cubby under the church bunkhouse with the other deserters who made it to the island.

**Memorable quote:** "Did you bring food?"

**Family:** Brother: Amos.

**Home:** Georgia.

**Occupation before the War:** Unemployed.

**Occupation after the War:** Failed Eagle.

**Safe Haven Status:** No longer a member.

**Descendant Status:** Normal.

**Relationship Status:** Single.

**Death:** Curtis was shot in the head by Kyle at the end of book #21.

**Notes:** Curtis left Safe Haven in a lifeboat in book #12. He quickly regretted that choice. He and some of the other survivors from that lifeboat made it to Pitcairn Island, where Tim gave them sanctuary and hid them. While waiting for a way to convince, or force, Angela to let them back into Safe Haven,

Curtis made a deal with Nature for power and became a traitor.

---



D

---

## Dace

**Height:** 6’.

**Weight:** 200 lbs.

**Eyes:** Green.

**Hair:** Blond.

**Age:** 23.

**First appearance:** Dace’s first appearance is in book #17 when he and the other lower level Eagles are in the training room talking about the missing mission men.

**Memorable quote:** Dace stopped next to her on the lightly bobbing pontoon bridge as the rescue crew all headed her way. “I feel like a secret agent. Will you call me Dace Bond?”

**Family:** Brother: Jack.

**Home:** South Carolina.

**Occupation before the War:** College student.

**Occupation after the War:** Taking a break from the Eagles to recover from his injury.

**Safe Haven Status:** Respected camp member.

**Descendant Status:** Animaler.

**Relationship Status:** Dating Lisa. Ex of Piper.

**Death:** Still alive as of book #22.

**Notes:** Dace was one of the last few pitiful refugees Safe Haven allowed into the mountain. He watched the mostly peaceful camp almost get destroyed while he recovered from starvation. He hadn’t been sure any of them would make it out of there alive, but the Eagles saved everyone with their magic and

their training. He joined at the next open call for rookies. Now that he's paralyzed, Dace has begun to think he was sacrificed for the normals, like the mission men were.

---

## Dag

**Height:** Average.

**Weight:** Average.

**Eyes:** Brown.

**Hair:** Braided blond ponytail.

**Age:** 30s.

**First appearance:** Dag's first appearance is in book #12 when his trap team captures Adrian.

**Memorable quote:** Dag scowled at her. "The UN will only pay us if he is intact. Do not take his lifeforce."

**Family:** Twin sister: Unnamed.

**Home:** Germany.

**Occupation before the War:** UN Hunter.

**Occupation after the War:** UN Hunter and XO of the team.

**Safe Haven Status:** Never a member.

**Descendant Status:** Tracker.

**Relationship Status:** Single.

**Death:** Dag was killed in book #12 when the Cayman Island locals tore him apart with their bare hands.

**Notes:** Dag enjoyed the adventure he got from working for the UN. He was completely loyal. He didn't care that they killed his sister after the war. He didn't like her anyway. She was the good twin.

---



## Daisey

**Height:** 5'7".

**Weight:** 180 lbs.

**Eyes:** Brown.

**Hair:** Gray and brown.

**Age:** 60s.

**First appearance:** Daisey's first mention is by Ralph in book #12. She insisted that he go check on the boss. Daisey's first appearance is in book #12 when she's helping care for ill people in the infirmary during the radiation sickness.

**Memorable quote:** Daisey turned on Sherman. "Oh, shut up! I'll turn you over to the enforcer and ask for removal. Don't mess with me!"

**Family:** Husband: Ralph.

**Home:** Unknown.

**Occupation before the War:** USO performer.

**Occupation after the War:** Retired Army performer.

**Safe Haven Status:** Respected camp member.

**Descendant Status:** Normal.

**Relationship Status:** Married to Ralph.

**Death:** Still alive as of book #22.

**Notes:** Daisey has never talked about her past in any detail. She is very careful to never reveal anything about her life before she joined Safe Haven. Even Ralph doesn't know her real background.

Does it matter? Maybe not, but if she's hiding something, it will come out. Safe Haven doesn't keep secrets for long, as you know.

---

## Daniella Dormer

**Height:** 5'5".

**Weight:** 130 lbs.

**Eyes:** Brown.

**Hair:** Brown.

**Age:** 37.

**First appearance:** Daniella's first mention is in book #13 when Jordi is telling Joel about the newest prisoners their trap team captured. Daniella is one of them. Daniella's first appearance is in book #13 when she and the other prisoners are watching from their cell in the International Detention Center as the pirates bring in more captives.

**Memorable quote:** *"Why are they bothering with children? They have enough power here to conquer this side of the world."*

**Family:** Husband: Tobias. Sister: Anna. Niece or nephew on the way.

**Home:** Mexico.

**Occupation before the War:** Escaped lab subject.

**Occupation after the War:** Rookie Eagle and medic.

**Safe Haven Status:** Respected camp member.

**Descendant Status:** Byzan.

**Relationship Status:** Widowed, by her hand.

**Death:** Still alive as of book #22.

**Notes:** Daniella is very happy for her sister. Anna's pregnancy has made Daniella wonder if motherhood is something she wants. She knows it

needs to be soon because of her age. All she has to do now is find the right partner. After decades with a man she hated, Daniella isn't going to settle for just any pair of balls.

---

## Dari #3

**Also known as:** Cum-catcher.

**Height:** 5'5".

**Weight:** 125 lbs.

**Eyes:** Brown.

**Hair:** Long blonde.

**Age:** 25.

**First appearance:** Dari's first appearance is in book #21 when she flirts with Theo.

**Memorable quote:** "That means you have free time."

**Family:** No known family alive.

**Home:** Washington state.

**Occupation before the War:** Prostitute.

**Occupation after the War:** UN fighter, rookie Eagle, camp relief source.

**Safe Haven Status:** Tolerated camp member.

**Descendant Status:** Normal.

**Relationship Status:** Too many lovers to list here.

**Death:** Dari was murdered in book #21 by Corey, who thought he would be let back into Safe Haven if he removed bad people.

**Notes:** Dari joined Safe Haven after the atoll battles. She was part of Cerise's landing team. She was also their cum-catcher.

---

## Dario #4

**Height:** 6'1".

**Weight:** 150 lbs.

**Eyes:** Blue.

**Hair:** Brown.

**Age:** 43.

**First appearance:** Dario's first named appearance is in book #20 when he is talking to Adrian. Adrian and Selina have just killed the pirates trying to get inside the submarine. Dario and his son have been following the submarine in their sailboat.

**Memorable quote:** Dario nodded. "A lot of us out here came together for a meeting to try and figure out what happened and how to get out of it. But we couldn't trust each other. Insults flew; bullets came after that."

**Family:** Son: Ned.

**Home:** Albany.

**Occupation before the War:** Plumber.

**Occupation after the War:** Ghost trapped in the fog.

**Safe Haven Status:** New camp member.

**Descendant Status:** Normal.

**Relationship Status:** Single.

**Death:** Dario died in book #22 on the smallest pirate ship. He was trying to steal the ship and accidentally released the pirate gas instead. Even after getting out of the fog, he still died in a green cloud.

**Notes:** Dario was a good man who kept his son alive while they were in the fog. He remained sane and almost got them out of hell. All he had to do was wait another month and go back to America on the next supply run.

---

## Darren #2

**Height:** 6’.

**Weight:** 225 lbs.

**Eyes:** Brown.

**Hair:** Brown.

**Age:** 30s.

**First appearance:** Darren’s first appearance is in book #15 when he is on guard duty over the brig and Tim, who has just been arrested.

**Memorable quote:** Darren went around the angry medic. “I can’t ever go through that pain again and I won’t ask her to resign. I’m a bachelor now. Someone else can hold her while she bleeds out on the deck for the boss’s goals.”

**Family:** No known family alive.

**Home:** Dallas.

**Occupation before the War:** Marine.

**Occupation after the War:** Level two Eagle on Marc’s team.

**Safe Haven Status:** Respected camp member.

**Descendant Status:** Tracker.

**Relationship Status:** Was dating Megan.

**Death:** Darren dies in book #15 when Megan shoots him after he takes Autumn, Angela, Greg, and Shawn hostage.

**Notes:** Darren wanted the time reset, so he could go back and save his family. He hid the pain of their loss with dangerous Eagle runs, drinking, and visits with camp relief sources where he pretended they



were his wife. His dead family was always his main focus even while he was going crazy. Losing female Eagles was the final straw, not the cause, of his madness.

---

## Darren #3

**Height:** 5'10".

**Weight:** 190 lbs.

**Eyes:** Green.

**Hair:** Gray.

**Age:** 50s.

**First appearance:** Darren's first appearance is at the end of book #13 when they find his body on the deck of the cruise ship after the battle at the IDC.

**Memorable quote:** No speaking lines.

**Family:** No known family alive.

**Home:** Illinois.

**Occupation before the War:** Painter.

**Occupation after the War:** Rookie Eagle.

**Safe Haven Status:** Respected camp member.

**Descendant Status:** Normal.

**Relationship Status:** Was dating Kim.

**Death:** Darren was hit by a stray bullet at the end of book #13, during the fight at the International Detention Center.

**Notes:** This Darren has been part of Safe Haven since before Angela joined. He often did quiet work for Adrian. So did Brandon. The two men were best friends.

---

## Darwin Knight

**Height:** 6'2".

**Weight:** 200 lbs.

**Eyes:** Green.

**Hair:** Brown.

**Age:** 30s.

**First appearance:** Darwin's first appearance is in book #16 when he and the other trackers are being taken to the UN command vessel for a meeting.

**Memorable quote:** Darwin sighed. "She really is a bloody dog. She's tracked descendants in places the rest of us couldn't even reach, let alone survive."

**Family:** No known family alive.

**Home:** Australia.

**Occupation before the War:** UN tracker.

**Occupation after the War:** UN tracker and hired assassin.

**Safe Haven Status:** Never a member.

**Descendant Status:** Mentalist. Descendants who can take over the minds of their targets make up 11% of all descendants. Their odds of being unstable are 80%, with males being more likely to resist it.

**Relationship Status:** Single.

**Death:** Darwin was killed by Cerise's death spell in book #16.

**Notes:** Many of the UN forces in book #16 were named after famous killers from Australia, including Darwin.

---

## Dave

**Height:** 6'.

**Weight:** 125 lbs.

**Eyes:** Blue.

**Hair:** Blond.

**Age:** 36.

**First appearance:** Dave happily set sail with Safe Haven from America. He had been with them since Nebraska. Dave's first named appearance is in book #21 when he and the other deserters are hiding under the church bunkhouse.

**Memorable quote:** No speaking lines.

**Family:** No known family alive.

**Home:** Montana.

**Occupation before the War:** Local journalist.

**Occupation after the War:** Unemployed.

**Safe Haven Status:** No longer a member.

**Descendant Status:** Normal.

**Relationship Status:** Single.

**Death:** Dave was shot by Greg at the end of book #21 after he tried to kill Angela.

**Notes:** Dave left Safe Haven in a lifeboat in book #12. He made it to Pitcairn Island, where Tim gave him sanctuary and hid him from the Eagles. Dave then made a deal with Nature to kill Angela.

Deep down, Dave had been sure that Angela would turn the cruise ship around and come back for them because they were normals and she was supposed to

protect them with her life. When she didn't, a hatred developed that Nature twisted into his death.

---

## Denese

**Height:** 5'4".

**Weight:** 120 lbs.

**Eyes:** Pale green.

**Hair:** Brown.

**Age:** 20s.

**First appearance:** Denese's first appearance is in book #16 when she and Albert are manning the controls of Director Haussler's UN command ship.

**Memorable quote:** "It jumped." Denese pointed at her dark screen. "I saw it jump into the system folder as it went dark."

**Family:** No known family alive.

**Home:** Australia.

**Occupation before the War:** UN sailor.

**Occupation after the War:** UN sailor and secret member of A.R.F.

**Safe Haven Status:** Never a member.

**Descendant Status:** Naturalist.

**Relationship Status:** Single.

**Death:** Denese was shot in the back in book #18 by Goldie.

**Notes:** Denese didn't want to join the UN or fight for them. She never wanted to challenge Safe Haven. Captured before the war and forced to do their bidding, Denese's one goal in life was to live long enough to see the UN destroyed. And she did.

---

## Diana

**Height:** 5'11".

**Weight:** 150 lbs.

**Eyes:** Blue.

**Hair:** Brown.

**Age:** 25.

**First appearance:** Diana's first appearance is in book #11 when she's flirting with Wade. They're in the smoking shop on the entertainment deck of the cruise ship.

**Memorable quote:** "I'm Diana." The Amazonian female scanned Wade from hat to boot. "We can have a drink sometime if you're interested."

**Family:** No known family alive.

**Home:** Ciemus.

**Occupation before the War:** Fisherwoman.

**Occupation after the War:** Fishing crew team leader and rookie Eagle.

**Safe Haven Status:** Respected camp member.

**Descendant Status:** Normal.

**Relationship Status:** Single.

**Death:** Still alive as of book #22.

**Notes:** Diana knew Wade would be a wonderful partner. She also knew his heart wasn't in it. She sensed his restlessness and tried to give him space before making a move. She was certain she could make him happy. Now that he's with Samantha and Neil, Diana is the one who's unhappy.

---



## Dina

**Height:** 5'5".

**Weight:** 120 lbs.

**Eyes:** Brown.

**Hair:** Brown.

**Age:** 40s.

**First appearance:** Dina's first appearance is in the beginning of book #12. She and her family are on the beach when William arrives there to mourn Safe Haven.

**Memorable quote:** "It's not rape. It's a fair trade." Dina hated the way life worked now. "We don't have anything else to give."

**Family:** Husband: Albert. Daughter: Lorna.

**Home:** Mississippi.

**Occupation before the War:** Church organist and assistant.

**Occupation after the War:** Unemployed.

**Safe Haven Status:** Never a member.

**Descendant Status:** Normal.

**Relationship Status:** Married to Albert.

**Death:** Dina was killed in book #12 when William snapped and burned the refugees on the beach.

**Notes:** Dina was smarter than her husband, but not enough to understand that William was cracking. Dina believed there was good in all people. It got her family killed.

---

## Dion

**Also known as:** The bad seed.

**Height:** 3'5".

**Weight:** 50 lbs.

**Eyes:** Brown.

**Hair:** Brown.

**Age:** 6.

**First appearance:** Dion's first appearance is in the opening scene of book #11 when Marc finds him on the UN ship after the kids slaughter everyone. The knockout spell didn't work on Dion.

**Memorable quote:** "Don't hurt me."

**Family:** No known family alive.

**Home:** Arizona.

**Safe Haven Status:** Cherished member of camp.

**Descendant Status:** Healer.

**Death:** Dion died from the radiation sickness in book #12.

**Notes:** Dion was sold to the UN by his parents for two bags of canned food. No wonder he went bad.

---

## Dirk

**Height:** 6'.

**Weight:** 180 lbs.

**Eyes:** Green.

**Hair:** Bald.

**Age:** 40s.

**First appearance:** Dirk's first appearance is in book #12 when his trap team tries to grab Cody and the other time-controlling kids from the cruise ship during the radiation sickness.

**Memorable quote:** No speaking lines.

**Family:** No known family alive.

**Home:** New Hampshire.

**Occupation before the War:** Clock repairman.

**Occupation after the War:** UN Hunter.

**Safe Haven Status:** Never a member.

**Descendant Status:** Normal.

**Relationship Status:** Single.

**Death:** Dirk was killed in book #12 by Tracy, who threw her knife into his spine.

**Notes:** Dirk was a coward at heart. Captured by the UN not long after the war, he tried to be brave, but it never worked. His last thought was about the calm, quiet clock shop he worked at before everything went to hell.

---

## Doris

**Height:** 5'5".

**Weight:** 120 lbs.

**Eyes:** Green.

**Hair:** Black.

**Age:** 30s.

**First appearance:** Doris's first appearance is in book #16 when Angela is scanning her and her husband while they do minor medical duties as rookies.

**Memorable quote:** No speaking lines yet.

**Family:** Husband: Willie.

**Home:** Atlanta.

**Occupation before the War:** PTA president.

**Occupation after the War:** Rookie medic in training.

**Safe Haven Status:** Respected camp member.

**Descendant Status:** Normal.

**Relationship Status:** Married to Willie.

**Death:** Still alive as of book #22.

**Notes:** We'll be seeing more of Doris as the story progresses. Angela's thoughts: Grief and recovery came in many forms. The couple would lean on each other and eventually, they would become instructors at the Safe Haven medical school. They would only cover the basics, but it would be the start that led to classes for each specific field in medicine as they had to face it. Fifty years from now, Safe Haven University would send groups of graduates

out into the world once a year to help rebuild hospitals and clinics while teaching people to survive.

---

## Doris #2

**Height:** 5'3".

**Weight:** 125 lbs.

**Eyes:** Green.

**Hair:** Black.

**Age:** 14.

**First appearance:** Doris's first and only mention is in book #12 when Marc is filling out his report on the deaths they had that day.

**Memorable quote:** No speaking lines.

**Family:** No known family alive.

**Home:** Lincoln.

**Safe Haven Status:** Loved camp member.

**Descendant Status:** Animaler.

**Relationship Status:** Single.

**Death:** Doris died in book #12 from the radiation sickness.

**Notes:** Doris had a thing for Stanley. He never knew.

---

## Drew

**Height:** 6’.

**Weight:** 170 lbs.

**Eyes:** Green.

**Hair:** Red.

**Age:** 30s.

**First appearance:** Drew’s first mention is in book #11 when Charlie and Tracy are discussing the new teams and crew lists. Drew is on the meal crew.

**Memorable quote:** “You can’t be an Eagle if we can’t trust you. The UN will betray you. Your dad will sell you out to get what he wants. We’re the only possible friends you have. Don’t throw that away.”

**Family:** No known family alive.

**Home:** Ciemus.

**Occupation before the War:** Escaped prisoner.

**Occupation after the War:** Meal crew member and rookie Eagle.

**Safe Haven Status:** Loved camp member.

**Descendant Status:** Normal.

**Relationship Status:** Single. Camp relief source.

**Death:** Drew sacrificed himself to save Greg in book #13. Greg has never gotten over it. Drew ascended to the Weigh Station in full honor.

**Notes:** Drew’s old life was one of drugs, theft, loose women, and regret. Every day he spent in Safe Haven’s light healed more of those holes and made

him glad that he survived. When the time came, he didn't hesitate to give his life for Greg.

---



## Duke

**Height:** 2’.

**Weight:** 160 lbs.

**Eyes:** Brown.

**Hair:** Blonde and gray.

**Age:** 14.

**First appearance:** Duke’s first appearance is in book #20 when Angela’s group sees and hears a Golden Retriever on a sailboat that won’t stop barking. He is with Ned and Dario. Duke’s first owner was killed by Ned.

**Memorable quote:** The Retriever’s nose wrinkled. *“You heard me.”* It immediately began barking again. *“Someone finally heard me!”*

**Family:** No known family alive.

**Home:** Albany.

**Occupation before the War:** Beloved family pet.

**Occupation after the War:** Guard, defender.

**Safe Haven Status:** Loved member of camp.

**Death:** Still alive as of book #22.

**Notes:** Duke barked all through book #20. In book #21, we found out he was talking, like Dog does, but he always ended up frustrated because no one understood him, which made him bark more. I assume his first owner was a magic user.

---

## Dutch

**Height:** 5'8".

**Weight:** 100 lbs.

**Eyes:** Blue.

**Hair:** Black.

**Age:** 11.

**First appearance:** Dutch's first appearance is in book #15 when the Eagles are trying to get the kids all settled for bed but they keep trying to escape. Dutch slips out through a window.

**Memorable quote:** Dutch waved it off, heading down the path that was now well lit. "We're allowed to go swimming."

**Family:** No known family alive.

**Home:** Maryland.

**Safe Haven Status:** Beloved member of camp.

**Descendant Status:** Normal.

**Death:** Still alive as of book #22.

**Notes:** Dutch is thrilled to be with his friends. He loves Hanali, Wendy, and Harold like they are family. All of those sweet kids feel the same way about him.

---

E

---

## Ed

**Height:** 6’.

**Weight:** 200 lbs.

**Eyes:** Gray.

**Hair:** Black.

**Age:** 36.

**First appearance:** Ed’s first mention is in book #11 when Wade is reporting about an injury overnight. Ed tripped over one of the cats and fell down the steps. It broke one of his ribs. Ed’s first appearance is in book #11 at the trial for Becky.

**Memorable quote:** “You son of a bitch!” Ed, wearing a bandage around his own ribs, lunged over the chairs. He tackled Blake, knocking the man’s head against the hard floor. He shrugged off the guards. “Hang on. I want to see if he lands on his feet!”

**Family:** No known family alive.

**Home:** Maine.

**Occupation before the War:** Ski instructor.

**Occupation after the War:** Eagle spy.

**Safe Haven Status:** Respected camp member.

**Descendant Status:** Invisible.

**Relationship Status:** Single.

**Death:** Still alive as of book #22.

**Notes:** We found out at the end of book #11 that Blake actually kicked the cat into Ed’s path to see if they (Ed and the cat) would land on their feet. Ed joined the Eagles quietly because he wanted

adventures that he wasn't brave enough to handle before the war. He still wants it. Being in the spotlight will be a huge change for Ed.

---

## Elijah

**Height:** 6'.

**Weight:** 190 lbs.

**Eyes:** Blue.

**Hair:** Blond.

**Age:** 40s.

**First appearance:** Elijah's first mention is in book #11 in the list of Eagles and crews. He is on the fishing crew. Elijah's first appearance is during the battle for the Weigh Station in book #12.

**Memorable quote:** No speaking lines yet.

**Family:** No known family alive.

**Home:** Ciemus.

**Occupation before the War:** Fisherman.

**Occupation after the War:** Fishing crew member and rookie Eagle.

**Safe Haven Status:** Respected camp member.

**Descendant Status:** Normal.

**Relationship Status:** Single.

**Death:** Elijah died in book #12 from the radiation sickness. He ascended to the Weigh Station and is still there.

**Notes:** Elijah's one regret about leaving Ciemus was not being able to have contact with the water anymore. He missed swimming in it. Now that he's at the Weigh Station, he swims in the river there every day.

---

## Ellen

**Height:** 5'4".

**Weight:** 225 lbs.

**Eyes:** Brown.

**Hair:** Brown.

**Age:** 40s.

**First appearance:** Ellen's first appearance is in book #12 when the camp normals are on the verge of rioting. She's one of the people demanding to be let off of the cruise ship.

**Memorable quote:** "I didn't aim for him! I wanted that deaf bitch for getting in my head!"

**Family:** Husband: Perry.

**Home:** Ohio.

**Occupation before the War:** Housewife.

**Occupation after the War:** Unemployed.

**Safe Haven Status:** Tolerated member of camp.

**Descendant Status:** Normal.

**Relationship Status:** Married to Perry.

**Death:** Ellen was stabbed and killed in book #12 by Mandy. Ellen had just shot and killed Michael, Mandy's boyfriend.

**Notes:** Ellen was a weak person and an abusive parent who beat her daughter to death right after the war. Her broken mind blocked it out, allowing her to slide into Safe Haven undetected. In time, she would have been exposed and hanged. This character is loosely based on the mother of the author.

---



## Ellie #2

**Height:** 2'5".

**Weight:** 25 lbs.

**Eyes:** Brown.

**Hair:** Black.

**Age:** 3.

**First appearance:** Ellie's first appearance is in book #12 when Marc tries to save her life by draining himself.

**Memorable quote:** No speaking lines.

**Family:** No known family alive.

**Home:** Nevada.

**Safe Haven Status:** Loved camp member.

**Descendant Status:** Invisible.

**Death:** Ellie died from the radiation sickness in book #12.

**Notes:** Ellie was found in a storm drain in Nevada, where she was hiding from wild dogs. The body of her father was found nearby. He died of an illness the Eagles couldn't identify at the time. His skin was bright red with blisters. Ellie wasn't exposed due to the storm drain being underground and the thick clothing her father had bundled her in.

---

## Emma

**Height:** Average.

**Weight:** Average.

**Eyes:** Brown.

**Hair:** Brown.

**Age:** 20s.

**First appearance:** Emma's first mention is in book #11 in the list of Eagles and crews. She is the leader of the homesteading crew. Emma's first appearance is in book #12 when she and the other deserters are arguing with the Eagles about leaving.

**Memorable quote:** Emma's anger grew. "Not me. I want off this ship."

**Family:** No known family alive.

**Home:** Ciemus.

**Occupation before the War:** Fisherwoman.

**Occupation after the War:** Homesteading crew leader and Special Forces Eagle.

**Safe Haven Status:** Respected camp member.

**Descendant Status:** Invisible.

**Relationship Status:** Emma was a cougar. She tried to claim several of Safe Haven's teenagers, including Mike and Charlie.

**Death:** Emma was killed in book #14 by Jeff because she refused to stop hunting their underaged boys. Jeff snapped her neck and burned her body.

**Notes:** Emma had a big fear of being closed up in small spaces. She didn't know where it came from. I do. Her parents used to lock her in the closet in her

room when they went out to the bar. She forgot about it after she went into foster care. Angela put Emma on the Special Forces team to give her a chance at another life, but it didn't matter. She tried to get off of the ship at the end. I think she felt death catching up to her.

---

## Ercu

**Height:** Average.

**Weight:** Average.

**Eyes:** Green.

**Hair:** Red.

**Age:** 5,111.

**First appearance:** Ercu's first appearance is in book #11 when Angela's team makes it to the level two angel area at the Weigh Station.

**Memorable quote:** "Ercu, strength of the half mortals."

**Family:** Four brothers: Leeto, Ares, Resus, Nysus.

**Home:** The Weigh Station.

**Occupation before the War:** Weigher of souls.

**Occupation after the War:** Weigher of souls.

**Safe Haven Status:** Never a member.

**Descendant Status:** Byzan. Locked.

**Relationship Status:** Unknown.

**Death:** Ercu was killed in book #12 when Angela and her team ascended and took over the Weigh Station. He was shot by Claire.

**Notes:** Ercu's gold pin is a shield. It means liar.

---

## Erika #3

**Height:** 5'4".

**Weight:** 115 lbs.

**Eyes:** Blue.

**Hair:** Black.

**Age:** 23.

**First appearance:** Erika's first appearance is in book #11 when she's talking to Tommy and sharing his cigar.

**Memorable quote:** Erika left the electronics on the counter and joined him by the door. She inhaled deeply of the smoke. "That smells good. I quit years ago, but I'm tempted."

**Family:** No known family alive.

**Home:** Ciemus.

**Occupation before the War:** Fisherwoman.

**Occupation after the War:** Fishing crew member and rookie Eagle.

**Safe Haven Status:** Respected camp member.

**Descendant Status:** Normal.

**Relationship Status:** Erika wanted Tommy.

**Death:** Erika died in book #12 from the radiation sickness.

**Notes:** Erika had been humiliated by an ex-boyfriend during a public dump. Her next boyfriend cheated on her. Her last choice left Ciemus right after the war and didn't make it back. Erika was terrified to try again because of her past. She was sure she was cursed.

---

## Erin

**Height:** 5'5".

**Weight:** 145 lbs.

**Eyes:** Brown.

**Hair:** Black.

**Age:** 30.

**First appearance:** Erin's first appearance is in book #15 when she and the other females are in the gym on the cruise ship for rookie tryouts. She almost shoots Zack when she drops a gun.

**Memorable quote:** "It's your fault!" Erin retreated as Zack stood up. "You scared me!"

**Family:** No known family alive.

**Home:** Cayman Islands.

**Occupation before the War:** Store clerk.

**Occupation after the War:** Level one Eagle on Angela's team.

**Safe Haven Status:** Respected camp member.

**Descendant Status:** Mentalist.

**Relationship Status:** Ex of Greg.

**Death:** Still alive as of book #22.

**Notes:** Erin has the rage illness. She refused the vaccine because she wants to keep the strength that came from the illness mutating her body. She's afraid she'll be forgotten in Safe Haven without it. She's also extremely jealous of Angela and Greg. That's a dangerous mix.

---

## Ester

**Height:** 5'5".

**Weight:** 200 lbs.

**Eyes:** Brown.

**Hair:** Brown.

**Age:** 50s.

**First appearance:** Ester's first mention is in book #15 when her notes on the rage experiment are found. Ester's first appearance is in book #15 when the Eagles are clearing the clinic right after Safe Haven lands on Pitcairn Island. She is the grounder Ian shoots.

**Memorable quote:** No speaking lines.

**Family:** No known family alive.

**Home:** Germany.

**Occupation before the War:** Pitcairn's only doctor.

**Occupation after the War:** UN doctor.

**Safe Haven Status:** Never a member.

**Descendant Status:** Normal.

**Relationship Status:** Unknown.

**Death:** Ester was killed in book #15 when Ian shot her after she tried to stab him.

**Notes:** Ester was sent to the island for experiments in the 90s. Over the decades, she inflicted many illnesses on the small population and blamed it on germs coming in from tourists.

---



## Eugene

**Height:** Average.

**Weight:** Average.

**Eyes:** Brown.

**Hair:** Curly brown.

**Age:** 20s.

**First appearance:** Eugene's first appearance is in book #15 when Marc's team is clearing the island. Eugene gathers a sample of the venom on Greg's kit after it is used to save Theo from a snake attack.

**Memorable quote:** Eugene looked up at him with pinched lips. "She's dead. Do your own samples."

**Family:** No known family alive.

**Home:** Ciemus.

**Occupation before the War:** College student.

**Occupation after the War:** Rookie Eagle and medic on Marc's team.

**Safe Haven Status:** Respected camp member.

**Descendant Status:** Normal.

**Relationship Status:** Single.

**Death:** Eugene was killed by Nature in book #15 while he was helping to clear the tunnels on Pitcairn Island. Nature stabbed her vines through his throat.

**Notes:** Eugene wanted to be an Eagle and medic, but he was too sensitive to work in the field. He might have done well in a sterile environment where someone else handled the emergencies. Being on the island while it was being cleared was terrifying

to Eugene. He tried hard to get through it, but in the end, Nature won.

---

F



## Faith

**Height:** 5'4".

**Weight:** 125 lbs.

**Eyes:** Green.

**Hair:** Brown braids.

**Age:** 22.

**First appearance:** Faith's first and only mention is in book #11 in the list of Eagles and crews. She is on the boat crew.

**Memorable quote:** No speaking lines.

**Family:** No known family alive.

**Home:** Ciemus.

**Occupation before the War:** Fisherwoman.

**Occupation after the War:** Boat crew member and rookie Eagle.

**Safe Haven Status:** Respected camp member.

**Descendant Status:** Normal.

**Relationship Status:** Single.

**Death:** Faith died in book #12 from the radiation sickness.

**Notes:** Faith wasn't feeling good before she left Ciemus. She'd been suffering from a cold for weeks. That allowed the radiation sickness to overwhelm her system.

---

## First Mother

**Height:** 5'7".

**Weight:** 135 lbs.

**Eyes:** Blue.

**Hair:** Red.

**Age:** 61.

**First appearance:** First Mother's first named appearance is in book #20, when she is luring Lisa into where Dace has already been knocked out. First Mother was one of the breeders who were rescued from Reicher's lab in book #18.

**Memorable quote:** "It's sad that so many females will sell us out and this time, it was for a man who doesn't even have balls. In the future, those women will be considered traitors. They won't be allowed to stay in our towns, barter for supplies, or receive our protection in any way. They'll be on the run."

**Family:** Twins: A boy and a girl.

**Home:** Australia.

**Occupation before the War:** Breeder in Reicher's lab.

**Occupation after the War:** Unemployed.

**Safe Haven Status:** Never a member.

**Descendant Status:** Normal.

**Relationship Status:** Was part of Harry's harem.

**Death:** First Mother was killed by Dog after she and the other normals took over the submarine. Dog crunched through her neck and almost stopped the hatch from being opened to the invaders.

**Notes:** First Mother had an obsession with always being picked first or being first in any line. She would physically attack the other mothers to ensure that she was first, even if it was for a chore or a punishment. She took over the mutiny as soon as the other former breeders asked for her help. Male flesh was her favorite meal.

---

## Francesca

**Height:** 5'6".

**Weight:** 130 lbs.

**Eyes:** Brown.

**Hair:** Short, dark.

**Age:** 30s.

**First appearance:** Francesca's first appearance is in book #13 when she and the rest of Neil's students are giving him a loving correction. Francesca goes first.

**Memorable quote:** Francesca snickered as Morgan put an arm around her shoulders; she let it stay, able to guess why he was doing it. "Just don't make Pam think you're cheating. No one wants to see your nuts rolling down the steps without you."

**Family:** No known family alive.

**Home:** North Carolina.

**Occupation before the War:** Unknown.

**Occupation after the War:** Failed Eagle.

**Safe Haven Status:** No longer a member.

**Descendant Status:** Normal.

**Relationship Status:** Briefly dated Jeff.

**Death:** Francesca was killed in book #16 when she helped Quinn ambush Marc on the runway. She ran from the Eagles and was eaten by an alligator. Or maybe by all of the gators. It was hard to see in the dark and I didn't really watch that closely. I have a weak stomach.

**Notes:** Francesca couldn't take being stalked by Kimmie. It gave her a huge fear of magic users that drove her into bad decisions that ended in her death.

---



## Front Man

**Height:** 6'2".

**Weight:** 190 lbs.

**Eyes:** Green.

**Hair:** Brown.

**Age:** 37.

**First appearance:** Front Man's first appearance is in book #19 when he and the other military men try to take over the submarine. Front Man was rescued from Reicher's lab in book #18.

**Memorable quote:** "Don't eat me! Don't eat me!"

**Family:** No known family alive.

**Home:** Australia.

**Occupation before the War:** Scroll diver in Reicher's lab.

**Occupation after the War:** Unemployed.

**Safe Haven Status:** Never a member.

**Descendant Status:** Tracker.

**Relationship Status:** Single.

**Death:** Front Man was killed by Isabel and some of the other caretakers in book #19. He was eaten alive.

**Notes:** Front Man was horribly scarred by his time in the lab. He believed Angela was like Reicher. He would have done anything to keep from repeating those abuses.

---



G

---

## Gabe

**Height:** Average.

**Weight:** Average.

**Eyes:** Brown.

**Hair:** Reddish blond.

**Age:** 20s.

**First appearance:** Gabe's first appearance is in book #13 when he is helping Wade give a session to a woman who is scared of men.

**Memorable quote:** Gabe turned back to his post. *"I can't wait to help save the day or the people. This is where I belong."* Gabe felt the cage rattle and strengthened the mental lock. *"Not yet, my powerful friend. I want to do it on my own first. Then you can come out and we'll play together."*

**Family:** No known family alive.

**Home:** New York.

**Occupation before the War:** Unemployed.

**Occupation after the War:** Level One Eagle on Angela's team.

**Safe Haven Status:** Respected camp member.

**Descendant Status:** Invisible.

**Relationship Status:** In love with Tonya.

**Death:** Gabe was killed by Tonya in book #16. Her witch electrocuted him. We still don't know for sure if it was murder or an accident.

**Notes:** Gabe was planning on taking Tonya captive so she would be forced to spend time with him and see how perfect they were for each other. He

decided a mass shooting would keep the Eagles from following him. I have no idea what flipped Gabe into that. Gabe seemed like a great guy and there is nothing in his past to hint at that level of mental instability.

---

## Gail

**Height:** Average.

**Weight:** Average.

**Eyes:** Brown.

**Hair:** Very long brown.

**Age:** 20s.

**First appearance:** Gail's first appearance is in book #12 when the camp normals are on the verge of rioting. She's one of the people demanding to be let off of the cruise ship.

**Memorable quote:** No speaking lines.

**Family:** No known family alive.

**Home:** Nebraska.

**Occupation before the War:** Prostitute.

**Occupation after the War:** Unemployed.

**Safe Haven Status:** Tolerated member of camp.

**Descendant Status:** Normal.

**Relationship Status:** Dating Linda.

**Death:** Gail died in book #12 when she left in a lifeboat with the other deserters. They had hoped to take the abandoned UN ship back to land, but the Eagle IDC team had already reclaimed it. Gail died of starvation when Martin and Perry refused to share anymore of the supplies.

**Notes:** Gail had a good childhood. Her parents loved her and provided well for her. She wasn't abused or attacked. She was just one of those souls who was never content, no matter how much they had. Being in Safe Haven only reinforced that

feeling until she was eager to escape the happiness  
of the other residents.

---

## Gina #2

**Height:** 5'4".

**Weight:** 140 lbs.

**Eyes:** Brown.

**Hair:** Bald.

**Age:** 27.

**First appearance:** Gina's first and only mention is in book #12 when Marc is filling out his report on the deaths they had that day.

**Memorable quote:** No speaking lines.

**Family:** No known family alive.

**Home:** Ciemus.

**Occupation before the War:** Fisherwoman.

**Occupation after the War:** Fisherwoman.

**Safe Haven Status:** Respected member of camp.

**Descendant Status:** Normal.

**Relationship Status:** Single.

**Death:** Gina died in book #12 from the radiation sickness.

**Notes:** Gina was always worried about her weight. When she joined Safe Haven, she began working out with the rookie Eagles to keep it under control. In time, their light would have pulled her in and gotten her to join Angela's army.

---

## **Ginny #3**

**Height:** 4'.

**Weight:** 80 lbs.

**Eyes:** Blue.

**Hair:** Blonde.

**Age:** 11.

**First appearance:** Ginny's first appearance is in book #12 when the battle for the Weigh Station is happening. She's talking to Romeo.

**Memorable quote:** "Me too." Ginny rotated to stare at Angela in adoration. "She saved me."

**Family:** No known family alive.

**Home:** Unknown.

**Safe Haven Status:** Loved camp member.

**Descendant Status:** Normal.

**Death:** Ginny died in book #12 from the radiation sickness. She ascended to the Weigh Station and is still there, helping the others guide humanity into the future.

**Notes:** Ginny's parents died in the bat attack. She would have died too, but her father's body protected her. It gave Ginny months of life that she wouldn't have had otherwise, and allowed her to be sent to the Weigh Station.

---



## Gio

**Also known as:** A worm subject.

**Height:** 5'11".

**Weight:** 170 lbs.

**Eyes:** Brown.

**Hair:** Black.

**Age:** 39.

**First appearance:** Gio's first named appearance is in book #19 when everyone is getting a medical checkup from Shawn and Harry on the submarine. Rescued in book #18, Gio is one of only two survivors from Reicher's disease research wing.

**Memorable quote:** "I'll work until I drop for this much food!"

**Family:** No known family alive.

**Home:** Greece.

**Occupation before the War:** Reicher's lab rat.

**Occupation after the War:** Rescued lab rat.

**Safe Haven Status:** Tolerated member of camp.

**Descendant Status:** Normal.

**Relationship Status:** Single.

**Death:** Still alive as of book #22.

**Notes:** Gio is immune to almost every known disease, except for parasites. He was severely infected with worms prior to his rescue. Starving to death no matter how much he ate has given Gio an eating disorder even though Harry cured him of the parasites. He and Nero can't stop eating. Even the

fire they recently survived may not be enough to control their self-defeating behavior.

---

## Gloria

**Height:** 5'6".

**Weight:** 145 lbs.

**Eyes:** Green.

**Hair:** Blonde.

**Age:** 39.

**First appearance:** Gloria's first and only mention is in book #12 when Marc is filling out his report on the deaths they had that day.

**Memorable quote:** No speaking lines.

**Family:** No known family alive.

**Home:** Ciemus.

**Occupation before the War:** Fisherwoman.

**Occupation after the War:** Fisherwoman.

**Safe Haven Status:** Respected camp member.

**Descendant Status:** Normal.

**Relationship Status:** Single.

**Death:** Gloria died in book #12 from the radiation sickness.

**Notes:** Gloria almost beat Donna for the job as Mayor of Ciemus. She lost by one vote. It was William's. He wasn't dating Donna yet and he wasn't sure if she was strong enough to do the job. If he had voted the other way, Gloria might still be alive and running Ciemus.

---

## Goldie

**Height:** 6'3".

**Weight:** 250 lbs.

**Eyes:** Brown.

**Hair:** Brown.

**Age:** 40s.

**First appearance:** Goldie's first appearance is in book #16 when he joins Justin and Darwin in the signup room of the UN command vessel right before they invade the first atoll.

**Memorable quote:** "Maybe that's why her hands are always bloody." Goldie cleared his throat as he entered. "She just made me XO."

**Family:** Twin sons.

**Home:** Australia.

**Occupation before the War:** UN fighter.

**Occupation after the War:** UN fighter and secret member of A.R.F.

**Safe Haven Status:** Never a member.

**Descendant Status:** Tracker.

**Relationship Status:** Widowed.

**Death:** Goldie was killed in book #19 after he murdered two people and conspired to take over the submarine. He was eaten by the caretakers.

**Notes:** Goldie and Cerise lived next to each other in Australia, but they weren't really friends. They were co-workers, in-laws, and members of the resistance force that really wasn't very good at resisting anything.

Goldie had the rage illness, but he had also developed an obsession for Isabel. The only thing good about him was his love for his children.

---

## **Gordon Mitchel**

**Height:** 5'11".

**Weight:** 155 lbs.

**Eyes:** Blue.

**Hair:** Blond.

**Age:** 18.

**First appearance:** Gordon's first appearance is in book #18 when he is helping his family defend their hiding place under the cemetery in Australia.

**Memorable quote:** Gordon grinned at his mother. "Well, then I say we go hunt some rats and feed them dad's chowder when they arrive. If they survive it, they're probably alright."

**Family:** Mother: Tilly. Father: Adrian. Stepfather: Trevor. Related to all of the other Mitchels.

**Home:** Australia.

**Occupation after the War:** Australian Resistance Force member.

**Safe Haven Status:** Never a member.

**Descendant Status:** Seer.

**Relationship Status:** Single.

**Death:** Still alive as of book #22.

**Notes:** Gordon was a gift to Trevor and Tilly, who wanted a child. Gordon loves his parents, but he also loves Adrian for being so generous. Gordon hopes they'll be able to spend time together in the future.

Adrian doesn't. He's afraid of spreading the Mitchel curse to the good-hearted boy.

---

## Grace Livingston

**Height:** 5'5".

**Weight:** 130 lbs.

**Eyes:** Blue.

**Hair:** Multi-colored

**Age:** 40s.

**First appearance:** Grace's first appearance is in book #18 when she catches Isabel sneaking in to visit her babies. Grace doesn't tell on her.

**Memorable quote:** Grace lowered her hand, where age spots were coming through now that her diet had changed. Madness crossed over her wrinkling face. "Do you know my last name?"

**Family:** Father: Joel. Stepsiblings: Joey, Alice, Wyatt, Damon, Violet, Madelyn.

**Home:** Australia.

**Occupation before the War:** Breeder in Reicher's lab.

**Occupation after the War:** Unemployed.

**Safe Haven Status:** Never a member.

**Descendant Status:** Normal.

**Relationship Status:** Single.

**Death:** Grace was killed in book #19 when she attacked Angela. She was stabbed in the chest.

**Notes:** Grace was unstable. She hated her father, but she couldn't stop herself from attacking Angela for killing that man. All of the Livingston family has mental issues. Very few of them will ever be able to fight that legacy.



---

Н

---

## Hailey

**Height:** 5'6".

**Weight:** 135 lbs.

**Eyes:** Green.

**Hair:** Teased sandy blonde.

**Age:** 19.

**First appearance:** Hailey's first mention is in book #11 when Tracy and Charlie are talking about the new teams and crews list. Hailey is on the meal crew. Hailey's first appearance is in book #12 when the rioters are demanding to be let off of the ship. She's one of them.

**Memorable quote:** "I hope that scarred bitch isn't put on point duty again."

**Family:** No known family alive.

**Home:** Ciemus.

**Occupation before the War:** Fisherwoman.

**Occupation after the War:** Meal crew member and rookie Eagle.

**Safe Haven Status:** Respected camp member.

**Descendant Status:** Normal.

**Relationship Status:** Was dating Martin.

**Death:** Assumed dead. Not confirmed.

**Notes:** Hailey loved 80s everything, from the hair to the clothes. She left Safe Haven with her boyfriend and the other deserters in book #12. She has not been heard from since.

---

# Hank

**Height:** 5'11".

**Weight:** 225 lbs.

**Eyes:** Brown.

**Hair:** Brown.

**Age:** 30s.

**First appearance:** Hank's first appearance is in book #15 when the Eagles are escorting Eugene's body back to the ship.

**Memorable quote:** Hank pushed his ballcap back for a better view. He scanned Conner and the IV, then Megan's grip on Darren's hand. "Why are you hiding her? She's hot."

**Family:** No known family alive.

**Home:** Dallas.

**Occupation before the War:** Unemployed.

**Occupation after the War:** Unemployed.

**Safe Haven Status:** Tolerated camp member.

**Descendant Status:** Normal.

**Relationship Status:** Single.

**Death:** Still alive as of book #22.

**Notes:** Hank always considered Darren a direct rival. He wanted Darren's life, in every way. At some point, he would have challenged Darren openly and tried to kill him. Now that Darren is gone, Hank will likely find someone else to compete with.

---

## Hannah #2

**Height:** Average.

**Weight:** Average.

**Eyes:** Blue.

**Hair:** Black.

**Age:** 20s.

**First appearance:** Hannah's first mention is in book #12 during the radiation sickness. She has been confined to the garden area with Theo.

**Memorable quote:** "Hold me steady... Careful with your thumb! That's not a bowling ball!"

**Family:** No known family alive.

**Home:** South Bend.

**Occupation before the War:** Unemployed.

**Occupation after the War:** Rookie Eagle, camp relief source.

**Safe Haven Status:** Respected camp member.

**Descendant Status:** Normal.

**Relationship Status:** Single.

**Death:** Hannah was shot and killed by UN intruders in book #15 while she was doing guard duty over the top deck. She died a hero.

**Notes:** Hannah was very competitive. The rookie tryout in the gym on the cruise ship wasn't the first time she knocked out someone's tooth to get a win. If they had survived, she would have eventually challenged Megan for Darren.

---

## Hannah #3

**Height:** Average.

**Weight:** Average.

**Eyes:** Blue.

**Hair:** Brown.

**Age:** 20s.

**First appearance:** Hannah's first appearance is in book #17 when she flirts with Adrian as he takes over the training of the new rookies who were allowed to join after the UN atoll battles.

**Memorable quote:** Hannah felt the same way about Morgan. He wasn't Adrian, but he would distract her enough to make life here tolerable. Hannah shrugged. "Kiss me and we'll see if it's possible."

**Family:** No known family alive.

**Home:** Ciemus..

**Occupation before the War:** UN fighter.

**Occupation after the War:** Rookie Eagle.

**Safe Haven Status:** New camp member.

**Descendant Status:** Normal.

**Relationship Status:** Was dating Morgan. In love with Adrian.

**Death:** Hannah died in book #21 when a mirror fell in the ballroom, decapitating her. Nature bumped into the ship and caused it as payback for losing that fight. Hannah had cancer as well. The name curse made sure she wouldn't survive with a double hit.

**Notes:** Angela let Hannah join because she knew the girl had a thing for Adrian. If they had hooked up, it

would have been a reward for Hannah and a nice way for her to spend her remaining days until the name curse kicked in. It would also have been another punishment for Adrian that a woman he cared for was doomed to die.

---

## Harold

**Height:** 5'6".

**Weight:** 115 lbs.

**Eyes:** Brown.

**Hair:** Brown.

**Age:** 13.

**First appearance:** Harold's first appearance is in book #15 when the Eagles are trying to get the kids all settled for bed but they keep trying to escape. Harold hides in the service elevator.

**Memorable quote:** "We should have asked first."

**Family:** No known family alive.

**Home:** Arizona.

**Safe Haven Status:** Beloved member of camp.

**Descendant Status:** Tracker.

**Death:** Still alive as of book #22.

**Notes:** Harold is thrilled to be with his friends. He loves Hanali, Wendy, and Dutch like they were family. All of those sweet kids feel the same way about him.

---



# Harvey

**Height:** 6’.

**Weight:** 200 lbs.

**Eyes:** Brown.

**Hair:** Brown.

**Age:** 61.

**First appearance:** Harvey’s first appearance is in book #19 when he calls on the radio for help. When the submarine gets to his location they only find his yacht. As they leave, Angela sees Harvey’s ghost.

**Memorable quote:** “I’m here. I’m always here; every morning that I wake up, it’s just me. Nothing ever changes. I don’t know where I am! I miss my wife.”

**Occupation before the War:** Unknown.

**Occupation after the War:** Ghost caught in the fog.

**Safe Haven Status:** Never a member.

**Descendant Status:** Normal.

**Relationship Status:** Married.

**Death:** Harvey’s whereabouts are unknown. I believe he is still wandering through the fog.

**Notes:** The name of his yacht was the Revonoc. Was he really Harvey Conover? Sure seemed like it to me.

---

## Bach Haussler

**Height:** 5'11".

**Weight:** 195 lbs.

**Eyes:** Blue.

**Hair:** Blond.

**Age:** 60s.

**First appearance:** Haussler's first appearance is in book #16 when he is watching Cerise as she argues with another tracker in the command room on the UN flagship.

**Memorable quote:** "Disarmed by mirth." Director Haussler's cold voice brought instant silence to the room. He slowly stood, single eye going over the ten trackers. "You are the best of your kind. If you can be defeated by amusement, this battle is already lost."

**Family:** No known family alive.

**Home:** Germany.

**Occupation before the War:** Director of the UN.

**Occupation after the War:** Director of the UN and leader of the invasion.

**Safe Haven Status:** Never a member.

**Descendant Status:** Byzan.

**Relationship Status:** Single.

**Death:** Haussler was killed in book #16 by Cerise. He had made it to Pitcairn Island and tried to kill her. She used a death spell. His lungs burst while his eyes exploded.

---

## Hawk

**Height:** 5'.

**Weight:** 100 lbs.

**Eyes:** Brown.

**Hair:** Black.

**Age:** 11.

**First appearance:** Hawk's first mention is in book #14 when Angela is scheduling career lessons for the kids with the senior Eagles. Hawk is on that list.

**Memorable quote:** No speaking lines yet.

**Family:** No known family alive.

**Home:** Safe Haven.

**Safe Haven Status:** Loved camp member.

**Descendant Status:** Normal.

**Death:** Still alive as of book #22.

**Notes:** Hawk misses the kids who died from the radiation sickness. If he doesn't make new friends, grief might push him into doing reckless things to make that feeling go away.

---

## Hazel

**Height:** 5'6".

**Weight:** 130 lbs.

**Eyes:** Brown.

**Hair:** Brown.

**Age:** 31.

**First appearance:** Hazel's first appearance is in book #16 when Cerise and Miles are discussing the UN invasion. Hazel is one of the crewmembers listening to that conversation.

**Memorable quote:** Hazel made a face. "What is it with him and treating them to dinner before they become dinner?"

**Family:** Sister: Jade.

**Home:** Australia.

**Occupation before the War:** UN sailor.

**Occupation after the War:** UN sailor and secret member of A.R.F.

**Safe Haven Status:** Never a member.

**Descendant Status:** Normal.

**Relationship Status:** Single.

**Death:** Hazel died in book #16 when she was hit by a stray bullet during the fighting between Kyle's group and the UN troops on Henderson Island.

**Notes:** Hazel hated her sister because it was Jade's idea to join the UN after their parents died.

---

## Heather

**Height:** 4'.

**Weight:** 100 lbs.

**Eyes:** Green.

**Hair:** Brown.

**Age:** 9.

**First appearance:** Heather's first appearance is in book #12 when the battle for the Weigh Station is happening. She is one of the kids who help kill The Messenger.

**Memorable quote:** "One at a time."

**Family:** No known family alive.

**Home:** Honolulu.

**Safe Haven Status:** Loved camp member.

**Descendant Status:** Enforcer.

**Death:** Heather died in book #12 from the radiation sickness. She ascended to the Weigh Station and lives there now.

**Notes:** Heather, Robbie, and Romeo have become very good friends. They are finally surrounded by adults who love them, spend time with them, and never hurt them.

---



## Isaac

**Height:** 6’.

**Weight:** 125 lbs.

**Eyes:** Brown.

**Hair:** Brown.

**Age:** 30s.

**First appearance:** Isaac’s first appearance is in book #14 when he and the other trackers are hunting the few fugitives in Port Stanley who haven’t surrendered to Chuck’s leadership. Isaac hits Renard with a bat.

**Memorable quote:** Isaac punched the boy, knocking him out. He grabbed the teen’s arms and lifted him over one shoulder. “The rest of you, keep going. When you find our runners, do not eat them. Our boss will be very upset if he can’t have a conversation first.”

**Family:** No known family alive.

**Home:** Port Stanley.

**Occupation before the War:** Farmer and fisherman.

**Occupation after the War:** Chuck’s minion.

**Safe Haven Status:** Never a member.

**Descendant Status:** Normal.

**Relationship Status:** Single.

**Death:** Still alive as of book #22.

**Notes:** Isaac hid while the other men were killed. After Safe Haven sailed away, Isaac joined the women and promised to be loyal to Chuck’s

offspring. He doesn't really care about them, but he's been starving to death for a year now. He just wants to be allowed to eat and live.

---



## Isabel

**Height:** 5'6".

**Weight:** 140 lbs.

**Eyes:** Brown.

**Hair:** Brown, black, and gray.

**Age:** 50s.

**First appearance:** Isabel's first appearance is in book #18. She is one of the medics in the cafeteria as Joseph walks by that area.

**Memorable quote:** Isabel stiffened and shook off his touch. "We're friends, and that's it. After being Reicher's brood mare for so long and then being Joseph's punching bag, I don't want to have sex or a relationship ever again."

**Family:** Twin daughters.

**Home:** Australia.

**Occupation before the War:** Breeder and medic in Reicher's lab.

**Occupation after the War:** Rookie Eagle.

**Safe Haven Status:** New camp member.

**Descendant Status:** Normal.

**Relationship Status:** Dating Stanley.

**Death:** Still alive as of book #22.

**Notes:** Isabel hated kids before Marc's team was brought into the lab. Over those eight weeks, she realized she was wrong, that the babies needed to be loved, not experimented on. Her guilt over that has pushed her into the light, forcing her to be good no matter the situation.

Isabel's attraction to Stanley came as a surprise to her. His youth and kind nature may actually allow Isabel a chance at a future that includes a happy relationship. It all depends on the strength of her mind. She acts like she's fine, but no one who was in that lab is really okay.

---

## Itis

**Height:** 6'1".

**Weight:** Average.

**Eyes:** Brown.

**Hair:** Brown.

**Age:** 5,356.

**First appearance:** Itis's first appearance is in book #11 when Angela's group goes to the Weigh Station. He is the angel who won the first bet. That win gave him a promotion to the next level.

**Memorable quote:** "Stop taking your anger out on them. You made a bad bet."

**Family:** Four brothers: Teus, Orin, Laistry, Azeez.

**Home:** The Weigh Station.

**Occupation before the War:** Weigher of souls.

**Occupation after the War:** Weigher of souls.

**Safe Haven Status:** Never a member.

**Descendant Status:** Byzan. Locked.

**Relationship Status:** Unknown.

**Death:** Itis died in book #12 when Angela and her team ascended and took over the Weigh Station. He was burned alive.

**Notes:** Itis's gold pin is a hand. It means thief.

---

J



## Jack #3

**Height:** 6’.

**Weight:** 180 lbs.

**Eyes:** Brown.

**Hair:** Brown.

**Age:** 40s.

**First appearance:** Jack’s first appearance is in book #19 when he refuses to give Theo more alcohol. Jack is running the mess on the submarine right then. Jack was rescued from Reicher’s lab in book #18.

**Memorable quote:** “If women get their way, all men will be subjects in a world lab. You have to get her out of control and back into a subordinate role where she belongs.”

**Family:** No known family alive.

**Home:** Dayton, Ohio.

**Occupation before the War:** Air Force pilot.

**Occupation after the War:** Scroll diver in Reicher’s lab.

**Safe Haven Status:** Never a member.

**Descendant Status:** Mentalist.

**Relationship Status:** Single.

**Death:** Jack was killed in the mess of the submarine when he attacked Thomas. Thomas punched him in the throat and then crushed his windpipe. He finished Jack off with strangulation. It was a vicious fight.

**Notes:** Jack didn't want men to become slaves. During his years of scroll diving for Reicher, Jack figured out what the future held. He convinced Harry that it was coming, tempting Harry to keep hunting power so he would be able to challenge Angela at some point.

---

## Jack #4

**Height:** 6'1".

**Weight:** 220 lbs.

**Eyes:** Green.

**Hair:** Blond.

**Age:** 37.

**First appearance:** Jack's first appearance is in book #17 when he and the other lower level Eagles are in the training room talking about the missing mission men.

**Memorable quote:** "Exactly. Cate only cares about protecting your life. She's perfect for the job and Angela was smart enough to know it. Learn everything from her that you can, kid. She's a genius and they usually burn out fast."

**Family:** Brother: Dace.

**Home:** South Carolina.

**Occupation before the War:** Former military and UN captive.

**Occupation after the War:** Private security team for leadership.

**Safe Haven Status:** Respected member of camp.

**Descendant Status:** Firewalker. As one of the basic elements of life, Firewalkers are among the oldest of descendants. They are a common type that makes up 10% of the magical population.

**Relationship Status:** Single. In love with Lisa.

**Death:** Still alive as of book #22.

**Notes:** Jack has an amazing shield. It's so strong that even Angela might not be able to get through it without a lot of work. That shield served him well the entire time he worked for the UN. I wonder how long it will hold now that he's fallen in love with his brother's woman.

---



## Jacob Genovese

**Height:** 6’.

**Weight:** 180 lbs.

**Eyes:** Blue.

**Hair:** Black spikes.

**Age:** 38.

**First appearance:** Jacob’s first appearance is in book #16 when he joins the other UN fighters on Henderson Island for the matchups.

**Memorable quote:** Jacob glanced up in time to see Kyle; he missed the knife. “Hey! I thought you were with Sa—” He staggered as Kyle stabbed him in the heart. Another quick slash sent blood gushing from his throat. It ran over his UN uniform in a flood of crimson.

**Family:** Brother: Kyle.

**Home:** New York City.

**Occupation before the War:** Mobster.

**Occupation after the War:** UN fighter.

**Safe Haven Status:** Never a member.

**Descendant Status:** Normal.

**Relationship Status:** Unknown.

**Death:** Jacob was killed in book #16 by Kyle.

**Notes:** Jacob and Kyle competed for everything as they grew up, be it drugs, runs, or women. There was never a chance for peace between them; that made their father very happy.

---

## Jade

**Height:** 5'5".

**Weight:** 130 lbs.

**Eyes:** Brown.

**Hair:** Brown.

**Age:** 33.

**First appearance:** Jade's first appearance is in book #16 when Cerise and Miles are discussing the UN invasion. Jade is one of the crewmembers listening to that conversation.

**Memorable quote:** "No!" Jade's scream echoed into the trees. "I wanted to kill her! No!"

**Family:** Sister: Hazel.

**Home:** Australia.

**Occupation before the War:** UN sailor.

**Occupation after the War:** UN sailor and secret member of A.R.F.

**Safe Haven Status:** Never a member.

**Descendant Status:** Normal.

**Relationship Status:** Single.

**Death:** Jade died in book #16 when she found her sister dead and started screaming. Ivan snapped her neck.

**Notes:** Jade started screaming because she was angry. She wanted to be the one who killed her sister. She hated Hazel because the girl was younger and an inch taller. No other reason.

---

## Jamie

**Height:** 6’.

**Weight:** 190 lbs.

**Eyes:** Brown.

**Hair:** Long black braid.

**Age:** 40s.

**First appearance:** Jamie’s first appearance is in book #12 when his trap team captures Adrian.

**Memorable quote:** Jamie, the team leader, snickered. “You think highly of yourself. So does the UN. You wouldn’t believe the reward they offered.”

**Family:** No known family alive.

**Home:** Oklahoma.

**Occupation before the War:** UN Hunter.

**Occupation after the War:** UN Hunter, Team Leader.

**Safe Haven Status:** Never a member.

**Descendant Status:** Tracker.

**Relationship Status:** Sleeping with Sadie.

**Death:** Jamie died in book #12. Kendle lunged forward and stabbed Jamie in the side as she inhaled again. “I warned you.” She hammered the blade into his throat a dozen times as she drained him.

**Notes:** Native American. He believed helping the UN would allow him to survive where many of his ancestors did not.

---

## Javier

**Height:** 5'11".

**Weight:** 195 lbs.

**Eyes:** Blue.

**Hair:** Bald.

**Age:** 20s.

**First appearance:** Javier's first appearance is in book #12 when his UN trap team lets Kronus out of the brig on the cruise ship.

**Memorable quote:** Javier took over the radio and dialed in the correct channel. "We have the Adrianna. We are on the way."

**Family:** Unnamed, being held hostage by the UN.

**Home:** Virginia.

**Occupation before the War:** UN fighter.

**Occupation after the War:** Trap team XO.

**Safe Haven Status:** Never a member.

**Descendant Status:** Normal.

**Relationship Status:** Single.

**Death:** Javier was torn apart by the angry kids Marc chose to help defend the bridge in book #12. Javier was given a choice between them and the sharks after he tried to take over the cruise ship. He picked the sharks, but he wasn't fast enough to jump overboard before the kids caught him.

**Notes:** Marc picked that death for Javier based on the thoughts he got from the man's mind. Javier had been at the northern UN encampment where most of the stolen kids were taken. Javier enjoyed his

time there in awful ways that I refused to detail here.  
His death was too kind and too fast.

---

## Joel Livingston

**Height:** 6’.

**Weight:** 210 lbs.

**Eyes:** Two-toned blue.

**Hair:** Wild, multi-colored.

**Age:** 50s.

**First appearance:** Joel’s first appearance is in book #13 during shift change and updates at the International Detention Center. He’s the boss.

**Memorable quote:** “Never forget about the wildcards.”

**Family:** Estranged wife: Emmie. Cousin: Jordi. Children: Joey, Alice, Madelyn, Wyatt, Damon, Violet, Grace.

**Home:** The International Detention Center.

**Occupation before the War:** UN trainer.

**Occupation after the War:** International Detention Center Commander.

**Safe Haven Status:** Never a member.

**Descendant Status:** Byzan. Mentalist.

**Relationship Status:** Estranged from Emmie.

**Death:** Joel was killed by Angela in book #13 when she banished him to hell in place of Michael. It was almost the only thing that could kill him. Joel was nearly invincible and immortal from consuming lifeforces.

**Notes:** Joel knew there was a chance that he would lose. Like Angela, he planned for both outcomes. If he won, he would get to consume Jennifer and

Angela, and become the most powerful magic user to ever live. If he lost, he would be in Hell, where he could use that power to control humanity. He knew there was only one way he could be removed at that point. What he didn't foresee was his son being sent to Hell in his place a short time later. Joel didn't have enough time to enact his plans. Now, he has to do it through Joey, but Joel's youngest son is a chip off the old block. He only listens to himself.

---

## Joey #5

**Also Known as:** Joey Livingston

**Height:** 4’.

**Weight:** 45 lbs.

**Eyes:** Two-toned blue.

**Hair:** Wild, multi-colored.

**Age:** 5.

**First appearance:** Joey’s first appearance is in book #13 when his father is tucking him into bed for a nap and a recharge.

**Memorable quote:** “Mothers are bad. Fathers are bad. Love is bad.”

**Family:** Father: Joel. Mother: Emmie. Brothers and sisters: Wyatt, Damon, Alice, Madelyn. Cousins: Jordi, Grace, Violet.

**Home:** The International Detention Center.

**Occupation after the War:** New Ruler of Hell

**Safe Haven Status:** Loved member of camp.

**Descendant Status:** Mentalist.

**Death:** Joey was killed by Marc in book #16 when he banished the boy to Hell in place of his father. Joey had just tried to kill Marc, repeatedly.

**Notes:** Joey is now the Ruler of Hell. He plans to send all of the bad souls back with all of their memories and power. He’s very angry that Angela killed his father, but his main driving force is the need for friendship. He’s still a very lonely little boy.

---



## Joey #6

**Height:** 3'4".

**Weight:** 35 lbs.

**Eyes:** Blue.

**Hair:** Red.

**Age:** 5.

**First appearance:** Joey's first mention is in book #12 when Marc is filling out his report on the deaths they had that day.

**Memorable quote:** No speaking lines.

**Family:** Father: Willie. Mother: Doris.

**Home:** Nebraska.

**Safe Haven Status:** Cherished member of camp.

**Descendant Status:** Normal.

**Death:** Joey died in book #12 from the radiation sickness.

**Notes:** This is one of the names that has the curse on it. No one named Joe, or any version of it, has survived for long.

---

## Jonny

**Height:** 5'11".

**Weight:** 170 lbs.

**Eyes:** Brown.

**Hair:** Brown.

**Age:** 20s.

**First appearance:** Jonny's first appearance is in book #11 when he is flirting with Trinity.

**Memorable quote:** Jonny grunted, sharing the excitement and the dread. "We're about to slide into hell again, but this time, we have a known traitor with us instead of an undercover spy." Jonny pinned him with a harsh glare. "Why did you follow in your dad's footsteps? We all liked you."

**Family:** No known family alive.

**Home:** Ciemus.

**Occupation before the War:** Unemployed.

**Occupation after the War:** Rookie Eagle.

**Safe Haven Status:** Stellar reputation.

**Descendant Status:** Normal.

**Relationship Status:** Jonny was obsessed with Grant.

**Death:** Jonny was killed in book #17 by Angela when he tried to rape Grant. Her witch crunched into his neck.

**Notes:** Jonny's victorious run to the International Detention Center reminded him that half of the world wasn't living under such strict rules. He wanted Grant and he decided it didn't matter if

Grant was willing. His obsession got him killed.  
That's a common theme in Safe Haven.

---

## Jordi

**Height:** 6’.

**Weight:** 190 lbs.

**Eyes:** Blue.

**Hair:** Multi-colored.

**Age:** 30s.

**First appearance:** Jordi’s first appearance is in book #13 when he is giving Joel updates at the International Detention Center.

**Memorable quote:** Jordi shrugged, head shaking. “She’s feral, man. I say we turn her loose on anyone who needs a punishment. She’ll get her workouts and you’ll have one less mouth to feed.”

**Family:** Cousins: Joel, Joey, Violet, Grace, Alice, Madelyn, Wyatt, Damon.

**Home:** The International Detention Center.

**Occupation before the War:** Joel’s assistant.

**Occupation after the War:** Joel’s assistant.

**Safe Haven Status:** Never a member.

**Descendant Status:** Tracker.

**Relationship Status:** Single.

**Death:** Jordi was killed in book #14 when he tried to capture Adrian. Kendle and Sadie hit him with spells at the same time. Then Sadie tossed him overboard while he was helpless, letting him drown.

**Notes:** Jordi wanted nothing more than to live up to the expectations of Joel and their family. He was determined to put the Livingston clan back on top. He also loved his work. He considered Cate to be

his crowning achievement. Sadly, he will live in her mind forever.

---

## Joseph Reicher

**Height:** 6'1".

**Weight:** 140 lbs.

**Eyes:** Blue.

**Hair:** Black.

**Age:** 30.

**First appearance:** Joseph's first appearance is in book #18 during the call between Marc and Reicher when Marc reaches Cerise's homestead. Joseph is the assistant who is helping Reicher and mouthing off.

**Memorable quote:** Joseph began rooting in Marc's foot, enjoying the blood while wishing the man could feel it and scream. "I'm not the devil, Mr. Ghost, but with a little love, I could be."

**Family:** Grandmother: Marion. Father: Reicher. Uncles: Oric and Rico. Siblings: Marc and Thalia. Numerous others. Related to all of the Bradys.

**Home:** Australia.

**Occupation before the War:** Assistant director in Reicher's lab.

**Occupation after the War:** Assistant director in Reicher's lab.

**Safe Haven Status:** Never a member.

**Descendant Status:** Tracker.

**Relationship Status:** Single.

**Death:** Joseph was killed in book #18 by Marion, his grandmother. She caught him hurting Isabel and slit his throat.

**Notes:** Joseph was an incel. His inability to attract a mate made him hate women so badly that only pain was able to arouse him. That turned into an obsession to mate a woman while he killed her. Marion did the world a favor when she got rid of Joseph.

---

## Joyce

**Height:** Average.

**Weight:** 155 lbs.

**Eyes:** Gray.

**Hair:** White.

**Age:** 61.

**First appearance:** Joyce's first and only mention is in book #12 when Marc is filling out his report on the deaths they had that day.

**Memorable quote:** No speaking lines.

**Family:** No known family alive.

**Home:** Pennsylvania.

**Occupation before the War:** Retired Meter Maid.

**Occupation after the War:** Retired.

**Safe Haven Status:** Loved camp member.

**Descendant Status:** Normal.

**Relationship Status:** Single.

**Death:** Joyce died in book #12 from the radiation sickness.

**Notes:** Joyce was one of Cesar's slaves. She was the oldest survivor from his reign of terror.

---



## Justin Milat

**Height:** 6’.

**Weight:** 200 lbs.

**Eyes:** Blue.

**Hair:** Black, long black beard.

**Age:** 30s.

**First appearance:** Justin’s first appearance is in book #16 when he and the other trackers are on their way to the UN command vessel for a meeting with their boss.

**Memorable quote:** “Did you find them already, Cerise?” Justin didn’t censor his disdain. “Bloody dogs always catch a scent faster when it’s their kind.”

**Family:** Uncle: Miles Silver.

**Home:** Australia.

**Occupation before the War:** UN spy.

**Occupation after the War:** UN fighter.

**Safe Haven Status:** Never a member.

**Descendant Status:** Corporeal. They can move objects with their minds. Corporeals are 10% of the magical population. They were created to build and protect.

**Relationship Status:** Single.

**Death:** Justin was killed in book #16 when Cerise hit him with a death spell and his eyes exploded.

**Notes:** Justin was crazy. He had been for most of his life. He knew it. The UN also knew it. Neither of

them were bothered by it at all. Crazy can be very useful.

---



K

---

## Kane

**Height:** Average.

**Weight:** Average.

**Eyes:** Brown.

**Hair:** Brown.

**Age:** 30s.

**First appearance:** Kane's first appearance is in book #13 when Jordi comes into the cellblock for a session with Cate. Kane is the shift supervisor.

**Memorable quote:** "All chairs are filled now, sir. We're ready for a session."

**Family:** No known family alive.

**Home:** Venezuela.

**Occupation before the War:** UN trainer.

**Occupation after the War:** UN trainer.

**Safe Haven Status:** Never a member.

**Descendant Status:** Normal.

**Relationship Status:** Single.

**Death:** Kane's whereabouts are unknown. He may have died in the IDC battle. He may also have escaped in a pod, like Jordi did.

**Notes:** Kane hoped for adventure when he joined the UN right after the war. He ended up being stuck in a lab with killers and scientists.

---

## Karleen Elizabeth Brady

**Also known as:** The Monster.

**Height:** 18 inches.

**Weight:** 6 lbs.

**Eyes:** Blue.

**Hair:** Black.

**Age:** 3 days.

**First appearance:** Karleen's first appearance is in book #22 on her birthday of July 2<sup>nd</sup>.

**Memorable quote:** *"Put me down!"*

**Family:** Grandfather: Reicher. Great uncle: Rico. Mother: Angela. Father: Marc. Sibling: Charlie. Half-siblings: Cate and Cody. Adoptive siblings: Mike and Mia. Nephew: Mathew.

**Home:** Safe Haven.

**Safe Haven Status:** Cherished, and feared, camp member.

**Descendant Status:** Healer. Healers make up 10% of the descendants. However, only 10% of those are female. Healers have limits. Only 1% of them can help with broken or crushed bones.

**Death:** Still alive as of book #22.

**Notes:** Karleen's witch is an ancient being who hates humanity. It will be interesting to see if her family can keep Karleen from going bad. If she falls, everything Safe Haven has gone through will have been in vain.

---

## Katie

**Height:** 5'5".

**Weight:** 130 lbs.

**Eyes:** Brown.

**Hair:** Brunette.

**Age:** 20s.

**First appearance:** Katie's first appearance is in book #11 when she is in the movie theater on the cruise ship and Lou discovers she's a descendant.

**Memorable quote:** Katie held up a hand. "He means me." She pointed at Sabrina. "She's an Invisible, but her power's starting to unlock."

**Family:** No known family alive.

**Home:** Ciemus.

**Occupation before the War:** Fisherwoman.

**Occupation after the War:** Fishing crew member and rookie Eagle.

**Safe Haven Status:** Respected camp member.

**Descendant Status:** Seer.

**Relationship Status:** Was dating Lou.

**Death:** Katie died in book #12 when she was shot by Brian. Brian was aiming for Brittani. Katie also had the radiation sickness, but she was recovering from that when she was shot.

**Notes:** Katie hid her gifts from William in Ciemus. She was afraid he would use her up. When she joined Safe Haven, she also hid her gifts from leadership. Katie didn't want to continue the legacy of the magic users, so her children wouldn't be put

into a lab. Deep down, Katie was sure the government would eventually take back over.

---

## Kayla

**Height:** 5'6".

**Weight:** 125 lbs.

**Eyes:** Blue.

**Hair:** Blonde.

**Age:** 22.

**First appearance:** Kayla's first mention is in book #11 in the list of Eagles and crews. She is on the garden crew.

**Memorable quote:** No speaking lines.

**Family:** No known family alive.

**Home:** Ciemus.

**Occupation before the War:** Fisherwoman.

**Occupation after the War:** Garden crew member and rookie Eagle.

**Safe Haven Status:** Respected camp member.

**Descendant Status:** Normal.

**Relationship Status:** Unknown.

**Death:** Kayla died in book #12 from the radiation sickness.

**Notes:** Kayla loved to draw. She hoped to do so well in the Eagles that Angela would owe her a favor. She planned to ask for permission to start an art class. She never even considered that Angela would have granted that simple request without needing to call in a favor for it.

---



## Keith

**Height:** 5'9".

**Weight:** 170 lbs.

**Eyes:** Brown.

**Hair:** Black.

**Age:** 40s.

**First appearance:** Keith's first appearance is in book #15. He is on ramp guard duty while part of the clearing team is getting their decontamination scrub.

**Memorable quote:** "I didn't either." Keith was sure one of the island teams had snuck out, practicing camouflage training. Kyle and Adrian had both liked to do that. There was no reason Marc wouldn't also.

**Family:** No known family alive.

**Home:** Indiana.

**Occupation before the War:** Local funny car drag racer.

**Occupation after the War:** Rookie Eagle.

**Safe Haven Status:** Respected camp member.

**Descendant Status:** Normal.

**Relationship Status:** Single.

**Death:** Still alive as of book #22.

**Notes:** He was with Safe Haven from the very beginning.

---

## Killer

**Height:** 6'1".

**Weight:** 240 lbs.

**Eyes:** Black.

**Hair:** Black.

**Age:** 46.

**First appearance:** Killer's first named appearance is in Book #20 when the oil workers make it inside the submarine. He immediately kills one of the normals who let them in. The oil workers have been following the submarine since it got stuck in the ice.

**Memorable quote:** "She's lying! I can make them tell us the truth!" Killer glared insanely. "Get the other one!"

**Family:** No known family alive.

**Home:** Alabama.

**Occupation before the War:** Oil worker.

**Occupation after the War:** Ghost trapped in the fog.

**Safe Haven Status:** Never a member.

**Descendant Status:** Normal.

**Relationship Status:** Single.

**Death:** Killer was shot by Selina as she and Isabel rescue everyone from the normals and the oil workers in book #20.

**Notes:** Killer was no longer sane enough to distinguish between friend or foe, innocent or enemy. He just wanted out of the fog; he didn't care how he achieved that goal. On the plus side, a lot of

murders didn't happen because he couldn't get home and continue his hobby of strangling hookers.

---

## Kim

**Height:** 5'4".

**Weight:** 170 lbs.

**Eyes:** Green.

**Hair:** Black.

**Age:** 30s.

**First appearance:** Kim's first appearance is in book #13 when Angela and her team are demonstrating their skills in front of the Eagles. Kim is one of her teammates.

**Memorable quote:** No speaking lines.

**Family:** No known family alive.

**Home:** Iowa.

**Occupation before the War:** Amateur musician.

**Occupation after the War:** Rookie Eagle.

**Safe Haven Status:** Respected camp member.

**Descendant Status:** Normal.

**Relationship Status:** Was dating Darren.

**Death:** Kim was hit by a stray bullet at the end of book #13, during the fight at the IDC.

**Notes:** Kim wanted to be a hero more than anything else. She tried to push Darren out of the way even though she was hit. As far as I'm concerned, she was a hero.

---

## Krieger

**Height:** 6’.

**Weight:** 190 lbs.

**Eyes:** Blue.

**Hair:** Blond.

**Age:** 40s.

**First appearance:** Krieger’s first appearance is in book #14 when the pirates are fighting Safe Haven for the island. Krieger is sailing a pirate ship over to board Adrian’s boat.

**Memorable quote:** Krieger studied Kendle, able to view her expression as they neared her. *She’s scared.* He grinned widely. “As you should be. Your life is about to end.”

**Family:** No known family alive.

**Home:** The open ocean.

**Occupation before the War:** Pirate and sailor.

**Occupation after the War:** XO of the pirate fleet.

**Safe Haven Status:** Never a member.

**Descendant Status:** Normal.

**Relationship Status:** Single.

**Death:** Krieger was killed by Kendle’s bone-breaking spell in book #14 during the battle for the island.

**Notes:** Krieger secretly hoped Safe Haven would defeat Joel and then he and the other pirates would defeat Safe Haven, giving them control of the world.

---

## **Kronus**

**Height:** 6’.

**Weight:** 200 lbs.

**Eyes:** Blue.

**Hair:** Black and brown.

**Age:** 5,510.

**First appearance:** Kronus’s first appearance is in book #11 when Angela’s team makes it to the level three area at the Weigh Station.

**Memorable quote:** “It does! She invited me! She said she had a job!” Kronus hated liars.

**Family:** Four brothers: Pimet, Cean, Atlas, Romi.

**Home:** The Weigh Station.

**Occupation before the War:** Weigher of souls.

**Occupation after the War:** Weigher of souls.

**Safe Haven Status:** Never a member.

**Descendant Status:** Byzan. Kronos type. Kronos are only 5% of the magical community. Because they keep this rare gift their entire lives, they are often hunted by other descendants.

**Relationship Status:** Unknown.

**Death:** Kronus was killed in book #12 when Kyle shot him in the stomach on the cruise ship. He also had the radiation sickness. No one told him not to drink from the water fountain in his cell.

**Notes:** Kronus’s gold pin is a clock. It means despair.

---



L

---



## Laistry

**Height:** 6'5".

**Weight:** 300 lbs.

**Eyes:** Brown.

**Hair:** Brown.

**Age:** 5,358.

**First appearance:** Laistry's first appearance is in book #11 when Angela's group goes to the Weigh Station. He is in the first room as a level one.

**Memorable quote:** "A happier life."

**Family:** Four brothers: Itis, Orin, Teus, Azeez.

**Home:** The Weigh Station.

**Occupation before the War:** Weigher of souls.

**Occupation after the War:** Weigher of souls.

**Safe Haven Status:** Never a member.

**Descendant Status:** Byzan. Locked.

**Relationship Status:** Unknown.

**Death:** Laistry died in book #12 when Angela and her team ascended and took over the Weigh Station. He was stabbed by Ray.

**Notes:** Laistry's gold pin is a bone. It means cannibal.

---

## Laura Shalet

**Height:** 5'9".

**Weight:** 180 lbs.

**Eyes:** Green.

**Hair:** Blonde spikes.

**Age:** 65.

**First appearance:** Laura's first appearance is in book #13 when Joel is mentally hunting for the people on his most wanted list. She gives him the finger and vanishes.

**Memorable quote:** "They don't talk." Laura got them to their feet. "The government scientists cut out their tongues to prevent them from using charms."

**Family:** Nieces: Twin girls, unnamed

**Home:** Mexico.

**Occupation before the War:** Escaped lab subject.

**Occupation after the War:** Escaped lab subject and kidnapper.

**Safe Haven Status:** Tolerated camp member.

**Descendant Status:** Corporeal.

**Relationship Status:** Widowed.

**Death:** Laura was shot by Shawn in book #14 after she abducted Cate, Cody, and Missy, and tried to do the time reset.

**Notes:** Eldest living member of the Shalet branch of descendants. Laura wanted to reset time so her family would still be alive. That's a common goal of the people who want time to reset. Very few of

them care about control at all. They just miss their loved ones.

---

## Laura's Nieces

**Height:** 4'6".

**Weight:** 90 lbs.

**Eyes:** Green.

**Hair:** Short, sandy blonde.

**Age:** 10.

**First appearance:** Laura's nieces first appear in book #13 when Joel is hunting for their aunt. He sees them all before Laura dims them from his view.

**Memorable quote:** They can't speak. Their tongues were cut out.

**Family:** They are twins.

**Home:** Mexico.

**Safe Haven Status:** Loved camp members.

**Descendant Status:** Unknown.

**Death:** Still alive as of book #22.

**Notes:** Laura's nieces are quiet, helpful, and kind. I have no idea how they survived being with Laura for so long.

---

## Leeto

**Height:** Average.

**Weight:** Average.

**Eyes:** Green.

**Hair:** Red.

**Age:** 5,444.

**First appearance:** Leeto's first appearance is in book #11 when Angela's team makes it to the level two angel area at the Weigh Station.

**Memorable quote:** "You'd have to take our place." Leeto kept distance between them as he explained that. "The Weigh Station must always be manned. We can only get out if someone takes our place."

**Family:** Nysus, Resus, Ercu, Ares.

**Home:** The Weigh Station.

**Occupation before the War:** Weigher of souls.

**Occupation after the War:** Weigher of souls.

**Safe Haven Status:** Never a member.

**Descendant Status:** Byzan. Locked.

**Relationship Status:** Unknown.

**Death:** Leeto was killed in book #12 when Angela and her team ascended and took over the Weigh Station. He was burned alive.

**Notes:** Leeto's gold pin is a musical lyre. It means distraction.

---

## Leo

**Height:** 5'10".

**Weight:** 135 lbs.

**Eyes:** Green.

**Hair:** Red spikes.

**Age:** 19.

**First appearance:** Leo's first and only mention is in book #12 when Marc is filling out his report on the radiation sickness deaths they've had that day.

**Memorable quote:** No speaking lines.

**Family:** No known family alive.

**Home:** New Jersey.

**Occupation before the War:** Private in the US Army.

**Occupation after the War:** Unemployed.

**Safe Haven Status:** Respected camp member.

**Descendant Status:** Normal.

**Relationship Status:** Single.

**Death:** Leo died in book #12 from the radiation sickness.

**Notes:** Leo didn't do well in the service. Only in for six months before the war came, it gave him an aversion to joining the Eagles. He might have conquered that over time and gone on to be a hero.

---

## Lila

**Height:** 5'5".

**Weight:** 140 lbs.

**Eyes:** Brown.

**Hair:** Brown.

**Age:** 40s.

**First appearance:** Lila's first mention is in book #11 when the boat team find Kronus on the UN ship. He tells them Lila hates their kind. Lila's first appearance is in book #11 when Marc is forcing her to sail the UN vessel to their cruise ship.

**Memorable quote:** "A day!" Lila spat at him.

**Family:** No known family alive.

**Home:** Gulf Port.

**Occupation before the War:** Sailor.

**Occupation after the War:** UN captain.

**Safe Haven Status:** Never a member.

**Descendant Status:** Normal.

**Relationship Status:** Widowed.

**Death:** Lila was killed in book #12 when she tried to break into the weapons room on the cruise ship while the UN trap teams were taking over the bridge. She was shot by Quinn.

**Notes:** Lila hated magic. Her deals with the UN were all in hopes that the UN would remove all descendants after they took over control of the world. She had no idea that the UN was using magic to conquer the earth.

---



## Lim

**Height:** 6’.

**Weight:** 195 lbs.

**Eyes:** Black.

**Hair:** Black.

**Age:** 30s.

**First appearance:** Lim’s first appearance is in book #12 when he and the other Eagles go to pick up Neil’s team from the shark-infested water around the refueling station near the Cayman Islands.

**Memorable quote:** A few seconds later, Lim breathed a sigh of relief. “We have a distraction coming. Get ready to roll.”

**Family:** No known family alive.

**Home:** Hawaii.

**Occupation before the War:** Escaped lab subject.

**Occupation after the War:** Rookie Eagle.

**Safe Haven Status:** Respected camp member.

**Descendant Status:** Seer. Seers can identify the gifts of others, including the unborn. They are 8% of the population. Visions of the future often come to them without warning or effort.

**Relationship Status:** Single.

**Death:** Still alive as of book #22.

**Notes:** Lim has a big future in Safe Haven. He’ll be a powerful addition to the Eagles and to the fighting force that goes back for the final battle. All he has to do is conquer his fear of death.

---

## Linda

**Height:** Average.

**Weight:** Average.

**Eyes:** Green.

**Hair:** Red.

**Age:** 28.

**First appearance:** Linda's first appearance is in book #12 when the camp normals are on the verge of rioting. She's one of the people demanding to be let off of the cruise ship.

**Memorable quote:** No speaking lines.

**Family:** No known family alive.

**Home:** Oregon.

**Occupation before the War:** Massage therapist.

**Occupation after the War:** Unemployed.

**Safe Haven Status:** Tolerated member of camp.

**Descendant Status:** Normal.

**Relationship Status:** Single.

**Death:** Linda died in book #12 when she left in a lifeboat with the other deserters. They had hoped to take the abandoned UN ship back to America, but the Eagle IDC team had already reclaimed that ship. Linda died of strangulation by Perry. He wanted to conserve the remaining water.

**Notes:** Linda realized it was a mistake to leave right away. She secretly hoped Angela would turn the cruise ship around and come back for them. She was screaming mentally for Angela the entire time that Perry was killing her.

---

## Lisa Tellier

**Height:** 5'6".

**Weight:** 135 lbs.

**Eyes:** Brown.

**Hair:** Brown.

**Age:** 31.

**First appearance:** Lisa's first appearance is in book #14 when she and the other rookie females come into the hot tub room on the cruise ship to soak their sore muscles and to avoid the males who have been hounding them.

**Memorable quote:** Lisa sighed, cheeks red. "They're not Eagles. They don't understand the rules. Just ignore them." She glanced at the table next to them and found Greg. She glanced away quickly, cheeks darkening further.

**Family:** Pregnant by Greg.

**Home:** Iowa.

**Occupation before the War:** Graphic art designer.

**Occupation after the War:** Level two Eagle on Angela's team, taking a break to care for Dace.

**Safe Haven Status:** Respected camp member.

**Descendant Status:** Normal.

**Relationship Status:** Dating Dace. Ex of Greg.

**Death:** Still alive as of book #22.

**Notes:** Lisa was terrified of magic for most of her time in Safe Haven. It ruined her relationship with Greg. By the time she realized magic was there to help them, she was pregnant and dating Dace. It's

been an odd road for Lisa. She's now caring for Dace, who's paralyzed, while trying to figure out how to be a good mother to Greg's child. I hope it works out for her. She's not bad; she's very confused.

---

## Longhaired Mother

**Height:** 5'6".

**Weight:** 125 lbs.

**Eyes:** Blue.

**Hair:** Black.

**Age:** 45.

**First appearance:** Longhaired Mother's first appearance is in book #20 when she and another former breeder are in the mess of the submarine. They are conspiring to use Charlie to force a reset. Longhaired Mother wants to go back to Reicher's lab. She was taken from there in book #18. She no longer considers it a rescue.

**Memorable quote:** "Less. We lost someone. Lisa flipped to their side." Longhair had spotted Lisa flying toward the ladder with panic on her face. "We'll have to be careful around her now. She's one of them."

**Family:** Twin daughters.

**Home:** Australia.

**Occupation before the War:** Breeder in Reicher's lab.

**Occupation after the War:** Unemployed.

**Safe Haven Status:** Never a member.

**Descendant Status:** Normal.

**Relationship Status:** Single.

**Death:** Longhaired Mother was crushed by Killer shortly after she let him and the other oil workers onto the submarine in book #20.

**Notes:** Longhaired Mother never intended to stay in Safe Haven. It was her idea to make a deal with the oil workers to take over the submarine.

---



## Lorna

**Height:** 4’.

**Weight:** 60 lbs.

**Eyes:** Brown.

**Hair:** Brown.

**Age:** 8.

**First appearance:** Lorna’s first appearance is in book #12 when her mother tells her to go make friends with William when he comes to the beach to mourn Safe Haven.

**Memorable quote:** The little girl began to cry. “Please, mister? We won’t be no trouble for you.”

**Family:** Mother: Dina. Father: Albert.

**Home:** Mississippi.

**Safe Haven Status:** Never a member.

**Descendant Status:** Normal.

**Death:** Lorna was killed in book #12 when William snapped and burned the refugees on the beach.

**Notes:** Lorna’s parents loved her deeply, but they didn’t have the survival skills to keep her alive. It’s too bad she didn’t go to the Weigh Station. The kids up there would have liked her for her kind nature.

---

## Lowan

**Height:** 5'10".

**Weight:** 175 lbs.

**Eyes:** Green.

**Hair:** Red.

**Age:** 35.

**First appearance:** Lowan's first appearance is in book #16 when Cerise and Miles are discussing the UN invasion. Lowan is one of the crewmembers listening to that conversation.

**Memorable quote:** Lowan began shedding his clothes. "Miles gave them to me."

**Family:** No known family alive.

**Home:** Australia.

**Occupation before the War:** UN sailor.

**Occupation after the War:** UN sailor and secret member of A.R.F.

**Safe Haven Status:** Never a member.

**Descendant Status:** Normal.

**Relationship Status:** Single. Obsessed with Jade and Hazel.

**Death:** Lowan was shot by Kyle in book #16 right as he started to disrobe and enjoy the drugged sisters.

**Notes:** *"I'm going to ask for her and her sister. I can't wait to play with them in my bomb shelter at home."* I think that about sums him up.

---

## Lydia

**Height:** 5'4".

**Weight:** 120 lbs.

**Eyes:** Green.

**Hair:** Long red.

**Age:** 25.

**First appearance:** Lydia's first mention is in book #11 in the list of Eagles and crews. She is on the fishing crew.

**Memorable quote:** No speaking lines.

**Family:** Unknown.

**Home:** Alaska.

**Occupation before the War:** Salmon fisherwoman.

**Occupation after the War:** Fishing crew member and rookie Eagle.

**Safe Haven Status:** Respected camp member.

**Descendant Status:** Normal.

**Relationship Status:** Single.

**Death:** Lydia died in book #12 from the radiation sickness.

**Notes:** Lydia was in Alabama for a fishing tournament when the war came. She never made it home to Alaska. Her family might still be alive there.

---

M



## Macy

**Height:** 5'9".

**Weight:** 180 lbs.

**Eyes:** Green.

**Hair:** Black.

**Age:** 33.

**First appearance:** Macy's first mention is in book #11 in the list of Eagles and crews. She is on the homesteading crew.

**Memorable quote:** No speaking lines yet.

**Family:** No known family alive.

**Home:** Ciemus.

**Occupation before the War:** Fisherwoman.

**Occupation after the War:** Homesteading crew member.

**Safe Haven Status:** Respected camp member.

**Descendant Status:** Invisible.

**Relationship Status:** Single.

**Death:** Still alive as of book #22.

**Notes:** Macy's large size has made her shy. She tries to blend in and go unnoticed so she isn't picked on.

---

## Madison

**Height:** 5'6".

**Weight:** 125 lbs.

**Eyes:** Brown.

**Hair:** Blonde.

**Age:** 24.

**First appearance:** Madison's first mention is in book #11 in the list of Eagles and crews. She is on the garden crew. Madison's first appearance is in book #14 when she goes with the Eagles to the abandoned yacht. She is removed from the Eagles during that run.

**Memorable quote:** Madison bent down and grabbed the edge of the cot. She hefted it up and over, spilling Allison onto the dusty floor. "Get down there and take it like a man!"

**Family:** No known family alive.

**Home:** Arizona.

**Occupation before the War:** Gun runner.

**Occupation after the War:** Garden crew member.

**Safe Haven Status:** Respected camp member.

**Descendant Status:** Conjuror. Mentalist.

**Relationship Status:** Single.

**Death:** Still alive as of book #22.

**Notes:** Biff wants Madison. Madison wants to be left alone. Marc wants Madison with Charlie. Madison wants to be left alone. Margret wants Madison to go away so she can have Charlie. Madison is getting tired of saying she wants to be

left alone. They'd all better watch out when she decides she's had enough. Except for Charlie. She'd never hurt him since she's in love with his father.

---

## Maliki

**Height:** 6'1".

**Weight:** 200 lbs.

**Eyes:** Brown.

**Hair:** Black.

**Age:** 30s.

**First appearance:** Maliki's first appearance is in book #12 when the UN trap team lets Kronus out of the brig on the cruise ship. He's the only descendant on that team.

**Memorable quote:** "Yes, but do not have contact with anyone who is sick." Maliki scanned for visible loot. "If we bring back this illness, we will be shot, along with our families."

**Family:** Unnamed, being held hostage by the UN.

**Home:** New Mexico.

**Occupation before the War:** UN fighter.

**Occupation after the War:** Trap team fighter.

**Safe Haven Status:** Never a member.

**Descendant Status:** Tracker.

**Relationship Status:** Single.

**Death:** Maliki was shot and killed in book #12 by Neil when he and the other trap team members tried to take over the bridge of the Adrianna.

**Notes:** Maliki thought he was among the strongest and smartest of the descendants. He was clearly wrong, as his overconfidence allowed him to be drawn into Marc's trap.



---

## Mandy

**Height:** 5'7".

**Weight:** 130 lbs.

**Eyes:** Green.

**Hair:** Blonde.

**Age:** 23.

**First appearance:** Mandy's first appearance is in book #12 when the camp normals are on the verge of rioting. She's one of the people demanding to be let off of the cruise ship.

**Memorable quote:** Mandy grunted, stabbing Ellen again. "I'll kill you!"

**Family:** No known family alive.

**Home:** Florida.

**Occupation before the War:** Cheerleader for the NFL.

**Occupation after the War:** Unemployed.

**Safe Haven Status:** Tolerated member of camp.

**Descendant Status:** Normal.

**Relationship Status:** Single.

**Death:** Mandy was shot and killed by Kenn in book #12 after she stabbed Ellen for killing her boyfriend.

**Notes:** Mandy had dreams of marrying Michael and going back to America to rule as king and queen. That quaint dream vanished when Ellen killed Michael. Mandy's mind snapped at that moment. Even if she'd survived, she wouldn't have recovered.

---

## Margret Mitchel

**Height:** 5'6".

**Weight:** 110 lbs.

**Eyes:** Brown.

**Hair:** Blonde.

**Age:** 15.

**First appearance:** Margret's first appearance is in Book #22 when we see her and Ed flirting while he's on duty over the school class.

**Memorable quote:** "I've never met anyone as brave. You don't have to be my boyfriend. I just want to hang out with you so maybe some of your courage will rub off on me and then I'll be able to follow my dreams like you are."

**Family:** Father: Somchai Abbot. Mother: Amanda Mitchel. Sibling: Alicia. Related to all of the other Mitchels.

**Home:** South Dakota.

**Occupation after the War:** Rookie Eagle.

**Safe Haven Status:** Beloved camp member.

**Descendant Status:** Enforcer.

**Relationship Status:** Wants Charlie.

**Death:** Still alive as of book #22.

**Notes:** Margret has been watching Charlie for a year. She's a bit obsessed with him. I think that runs in her Mitchel blood. She also seems like a sweet, responsible girl who might really be a good match for him. Time will tell.

---

## Marion Reicher

**Height:** 5'5".

**Weight:** 140 lbs.

**Eyes:** Blue.

**Hair:** Black and grey, bun.

**Age:** 90s.

**First appearance:** Marion's first appearance is in book #18 during the time push when Gus kills Valerie. Marion is the 'nanny' taking care of the kids.

**Memorable quote:** Part of Marion's job was to keep the breeders calm. She immediately lied. "I'm sure the boss has jobs for them. He doesn't hurt women."

**Family:** Sons: Reicher, Oric, Rico. Numerous other kids. Grandchildren: Joseph, Thalia, Marc. Numerous other grandkids. Related to all of the Bradys.

**Home:** Australia.

**Occupation before the War:** Head caretaker in Reicher's lab.

**Occupation after the War:** Head caretaker in Reicher's lab.

**Safe Haven Status:** Never a member.

**Descendant Status:** Tracker.

**Relationship Status:** Widowed.

**Death:** Marion was killed in book #18 when Isabel stabbed her in the back, literally.

**Notes:** Marion often consumed the corpse meat to allow her to stay young enough to keep working in the lab. Marion believed in everything her son was doing. She was honored that Reicher kept her on to help him after he took over leadership of the lab. She loved him and him only, but she would have removed him if it meant achieving one of their goals for domination over all realms.

---

## Marri Shalet

**Height:** 5'7".

**Weight:** 135 lbs.

**Eyes:** Green.

**Hair:** Red.

**Age:** 22.

**First appearance:** Marri's first and only mention is in book #21 when Rico is explaining what crime he committed. Marri was the woman who accused him of rape.

**Memorable quote:** No speaking lines.

**Family:** Distant cousins: Laura Shalet's nieces.

**Home:** Australia.

**Occupation before the War:** UN medical worker.

**Safe Haven Status:** Never a member.

**Descendant Status:** Normal.

**Relationship Status:** Single.

**Death:** Marri was killed by a human trafficker long before the war.

**Notes:** Marri was desperate to get out of the lab. She framed Rico for rape after she was caught trying to convince him to help her escape. Once he was released from jail, Rico did the crime he was accused of and then sold her to a trafficker who often brought new subjects to the lab for Reicher's experiments.

---



## Martin

**Height:** Average.

**Weight:** Average.

**Eyes:** Brown.

**Hair:** Brown.

**Age:** 30s.

**First appearance:** Martin's first mention is in book #11 in the list of Eagles and crews. He is on the garden crew. Martin's first appearance is in book #12 right after Sabrina dies. He's in the lounge with her, locked down.

**Memorable quote:** Martin stepped around Ian, ignoring the man's immediate fighting stance reaction. He held out a hand to Marc. "I'm sorry it has to be this way. Thank you for letting us leave."

**Family:** No known family alive.

**Home:** Ciemus.

**Occupation before the War:** Unemployed.

**Occupation after the War:** Garden crew member and rookie Eagle.

**Safe Haven Status:** Tolerated member of camp.

**Descendant Status:** Normal.

**Relationship Status:** Was dating Hailey.

**Death:** Martin was shot in book #21 after he almost killed Isabel. Stanley was very unhappy about that.

**Notes:** The Eagle meeting to decide if they were leaving almost stopped Martin from deserting. He saw that they would be responsible for too many weak people who'd never been Eagles. He still left

and then immediately regretted it. During the time it took to get to Pitcairn in the lifeboat, his mind snapped. All he wanted after that was to be in charge of Safe Haven so he could make Angela and Marc pay for all of the misery he'd gone through.

---

## Mary Jo

**Height:** 5'3".

**Weight:** 180 lbs.

**Eyes:** Brown.

**Hair:** Brown.

**Age:** 30s.

**First appearance:** In the original files, Mary Jo's first appearance is in book #1 when she gives Kendle a hard time about her friendship with Luke. In the current files, Mary Jo's first appearance is in book #15 when she lumbers out of the shadows as a grounder and surprises Kendle's group.

**Memorable quote:** No speaking lines.

**Family:** No known family alive.

**Home:** Pitcairn Island.

**Occupation before the War:** Store clerk.

**Occupation after the War:** Rage illness subject.

**Safe Haven Status:** Never a member.

**Descendant Status:** Normal.

**Relationship Status:** Single.

**Death:** Mary Jo died in book #15 when Kendle stabbed her and ripped her guts open.

**Notes:** Mary Jo was very mean to Kendle when she washed up on the island right after the war. Kendle enjoyed killing her more than most of those she removed.

---

## Mathew Charles Brady

**Height:** 22 inches.

**Weight:** 9 lbs.

**Eyes:** Blue.

**Hair:** Black.

**Age:** 7 weeks.

**Birthday:** May 7<sup>th</sup>

**First appearance:** Mathew's first mention is in book #20 when Charlie dreams of his birth. Mathew's first appearance is in book #21 when Tracy drops him off to his dad and then leaves with Ivan.

**Memorable quote:** No speaking lines yet.

**Family:** Mother: Tracy. Father: Charlie. Grandparents: Marc and Angela. Related to all of the Bradys and Reichers.

**Home:** Safe Haven.

**Safe Haven Status:** Cherished camp member.

**Descendant Status:** Mentalist.

**Death:** Still alive as of book #22.

**Notes:** Little Mathew is already gifted with mood charms. He helped Ivan control Tracy until his birth. He doesn't miss his mother at all.

---

## Matti

**Height:** 5'5".

**Weight:** 125 lbs.

**Eyes:** Brown.

**Hair:** Brown.

**Age:** 20s.

**First appearance:** Matti's first appearance is in book #14 in a small village on Port Stanley when the women are cutting up chickens near Trent, who has been taken captive. They plan to eat Trent come sunrise.

**Memorable quote:** Matti sent the order. *"Kill him."*

**Family:** Pregnant with Chuck's evil baby.

**Home:** Port Stanley.

**Occupation before the War:** Village wife.

**Occupation after the War:** Chuck's protector and mate.

**Safe Haven Status:** Never a member.

**Descendant Status:** Normal.

**Relationship Status:** Widowed.

**Death:** Still alive as of book #22.

**Notes:** Everyone in Port Stanley was starving from lack of crops and no more supply ships coming in after the war. When Chuck suggested eating human flesh, Matti and the other women agreed, to save their children. They lost those children anyway, but by then eating flesh had become normal to them. They won't ever give it up. Matti also won't forget

Chuck's plan to take over the South American compound.

---

## Maxine

**Height:** Average.

**Weight:** Average.

**Eyes:** Brown.

**Hair:** Auburn.

**Age:** 24.

**First appearance:** Maxine's first and only mention is in book #12 when Marc is filling out his report on the deaths they had that day.

**Memorable quote:** No speaking lines.

**Family:** No known family alive.

**Home:** Michigan.

**Occupation before the War:** Day care manager.

**Occupation after the War:** Rookie den mother.

**Safe Haven Status:** Loved camp member.

**Descendant Status:** Invisible.

**Relationship Status:** Single.

**Death:** Maxine died in book #12 from the radiation sickness.

**Notes:** Maxine had a thing for Spencer. She liked it that he was good with animals and willing to get his hands dirty. She was just too shy to tell him how she felt.

---

## McClery

**Also known as:** Allan.

**Height:** 6'1".

**Weight:** Average.

**Eyes:** Blue.

**Hair:** Brown.

**Age:** 30s.

**First appearance:** McClery's first appearance is in book #12 when the UN trap team let Kronus out of the brig on the cruise ship. He's a member of that team.

**Memorable quote:** "I wasn't even supposed to be along for this run. Someone got sick. I was called up a month early."

**Family:** Unnamed, being held hostage by the UN.

**Home:** Montana.

**Occupation before the War:** UN fighter.

**Occupation after the War:** Trap team member.

**Safe Haven Status:** Never a member.

**Descendant Status:** Normal.

**Relationship Status:** Wife: Unnamed.

**Death:** McClery hanged himself in book #12 while in the brig on the cruise ship.

**Notes:** McClery finally realized he was one of the bad guys. Being around Safe Haven's people forced him to see that so clearly that the only recourse was death.

---



## Megan #2

**Height:** Average.

**Weight:** Average.

**Eyes:** Blue.

**Hair:** Black.

**Age:** 20.

**First appearance:** Megan's first appearance is in book #14 during the rookie evaluation when the women are all on their periods at the same time.

**Memorable quote:** Megan rotated, lifting her weapon. She pulled the trigger and shot him in the temple, closing her eyes as his blood sprayed her, the chair, and the sleeping people. "It's my honor."

**Family:** No known family alive.

**Home:** Memphis.

**Occupation before the War:** Police cadet.

**Occupation after the War:** Rookie Eagle.

**Safe Haven Status:** Respected camp member.

**Descendant Status:** Normal.

**Relationship Status:** Was dating Darren.

**Death:** Megan died in book #16 when she tripped and hit the corner of a hard table with her head and neck.

**Notes:** Megan did her duty to the boss and saved Angela's life, along with Greg and Shawn's, but it still wasn't enough to save her. That's some name curse.

---

## Megan #3

**Height:** 5'5".

**Weight:** 125 lbs.

**Eyes:** Blue.

**Hair:** Brown braids.

**Age:** 20s.

**First appearance:** Megan's first mention is in book #17 when Neil is talking to Hannah and thinking about the name curse. Her first appearance is at the jail in book #17 when Angela offers to let Tonya escape. Megan is one of the guards who are listening to that conversation.

**Memorable quote:** Megan let herself fall, kicking the puppy in the process. *"I hate dogs!"*

**Family:** No known family alive.

**Home:** Ciemus.

**Occupation before the War:** UN fighter.

**Occupation after the War:** Rookie Eagle.

**Safe Haven Status:** New camp member.

**Descendant Status:** Normal.

**Relationship Status:** Single.

**Death:** Megan was murdered in book #21 by Martin for being a thief. He was trying to earn his way back into Safe Haven while also enjoying his urge to stab women.

**Notes:** This Megan was with the UN forces who invaded the islands around Pitcairn.

---

## Megan #4

**Height:** 5'6".

**Weight:** 140 lbs.

**Eyes:** Blue.

**Hair:** Black.

**Age:** 22.

**First appearance:** Megan's first appearance is in book #12 when she's suffering from the radiation sickness.

**Memorable quote:** No speaking lines.

**Family:** No known family alive.

**Home:** Vermont.

**Occupation before the War:** FAA trainee.

**Occupation after the War:** Unemployed.

**Safe Haven Status:** Respected camp member.

**Descendant Status:** Normal.

**Relationship Status:** Single.

**Death:** Megan died from the radiation sickness in book #12.

**Notes:** Megan is obviously one of the names under the curse. It seems to happen a little more to this name. That probably means something.

---

## Mel

**Height:** 120 lbs.

**Weight:** 5'5".

**Eyes:** Brown.

**Hair:** Unruly brown hair that flowed down her back like a waterfall and reached her knees

**Age:** 105. Time is different in the fog.

**First appearance:** Mel's first appearance is in book #19 when Angela's team is exploring Howland Island. She and her rock hut appear in an area they've already cleared.

**Memorable quote:** "We're in limbo. The longer we're here, the more we fade."

**Family:** No known family alive.

**Home:** Atchison, Kansas.

**Occupation before the War:** Pilot.

**Occupation after the War:** Castaway.

**Safe Haven Status:** Never a member.

**Descendant Status:** Invisible.

**Relationship Status:** Single.

**Death:** Mel burst into the dust of life at the end of book #20. Angela was devastated. She considered Mel a good friend. Angela doesn't give that title to many people. After losing Mel, it may be years before Angela tries to make another close friend, just to avoid the pain if she can't save them.

**Notes:** Angela and her group believe Mel was really Amelia Earhart. Who am I to say differently?

---

## Melanie Brady

**Height:** 4'5".

**Weight:** 40 lbs.

**Eyes:** Blue.

**Hair:** Black.

**Age:** 5.

**First appearance:** Melanie's first appearance is in the beginning of book #11 when Marc reveals her long-ago death at the hands of their mother.

**Memorable quote:** "I love you too, brother."

**Family:** Father: Reicher. Uncle: Rico. Unnamed brother and sister. Stepsister: Sally, Thalia. Stepbrother: Joseph. Twin brother: Marc.

**Home:** Ohio.

**Descendant Status:** Healer.

**Safe Haven Status:** Never a member.

**Death:** Melanie was drowned by her mother when she and Marc were just five years old.

**Notes:** Melanie was adventurous and unafraid of her mother. She took after Reicher in most ways, except she was good where he was bad. Her zest for life horrified her mother. She couldn't control Reicher and she knew she wouldn't be able to control Melanie either.

---

# Michael

**Height:** Average.

**Weight:** Average.

**Eyes:** Green.

**Hair:** Brown.

**Age:** 20s.

**First appearance:** Michael's first mention is in book #11 in the list of Eagles and crews. He is on the personal security crew. Michael's first appearance is in book #12 when he is quarantined in the lounge and Sabrina dies.

**Memorable quote:** Michael aimed at Travis. "Stop the boat. We want off." Michael was at his limit. He'd been telling anyone who would listen what the body crew was doing, but they didn't care enough to stop it.

**Family:** No known family alive.

**Home:** Chicago.

**Occupation before the War:** Liberal arts student.

**Occupation after the War:** Rookie Eagle.

**Safe Haven Status:** Tolerated member of camp.

**Descendant Status:** Normal.

**Relationship Status:** Was dating Mandy.

**Death:** Michael was shot in book #12 by Ellen when she panicked about getting off of the cruise ship. It was an accident. She was aiming for Debra.

**Notes:** Michael was a kind soul who couldn't take much. He was sheltered in childhood and broken

during the war. The radiation sickness was just the last straw for him.

---



## Michael Mitchel

**Also known as:** The Other King.

**Height:** 6'2".

**Weight:** 200 lbs.

**Eyes:** Brown.

**Hair:** Red beard.

**Other:** The red beard, brown eyes and yellow skin were a perfect combination. He looked like all of humanity in one beautiful form.

**Age:** 66,666.

**First appearance:** Michael's first appearance is in book #12 when Angela invites the ruler of Hell for a chat right as she's about to be killed.

**Memorable quote:** "He said so as he left. I believe the exact words were... *Not a chance in hell.*"

**Family:** Related to every Mitchel.

**Home:** Hell.

**Occupation before the War:** Ruler of Hell.

**Occupation after the War:** Ruler of Hell

**Safe Haven Status:** Never a member.

**Descendant Status:** Byzan. Angel. Tracker.

**Relationship Status:** Single.

**Death:** Michael was banished from Hell in book #13 by Angela, who had to send Joel there because he was too powerful for her to beat in a fight. I suspect we're not done with Michael, however.

**Notes:** Angela and Michael became fast friends in their short meeting. If they ever get to see each other

again, those emotions may cause surprise and jealousy in all of the men who love her.

---

## Miles Silver

**Also known as:** Director Miles.

**Height:** 6’.

**Weight:** 250 lbs.

**Eyes:** Brown.

**Hair:** Brown.

**Age:** 50s.

**First appearance:** Miles’s first appearance is in book #16 when he and Cerise are discussing the UN invasion.

**Memorable quote:** “The hard way, then.” Miles slammed the door. “Sometimes sour meat is exactly what I want.”

**Family:** Nephew: Justin Milat.

**Home:** Australia.

**Occupation before the War:** UN Director.

**Occupation after the War:** UN Director and Captain.

**Safe Haven Status:** Never a member.

**Descendant Status:** Normal; naturally immune to most magic and spells.

**Relationship Status:** Sleeping with Cerise.

**Death:** Miles was killed by Greg in book #16. Greg used his hybrid death spell for the first time when Miles tried to eat Violet.

**Notes:** Miles loved human flesh. He didn’t really care that it kept him young. He just enjoyed the taste.

---

## Mr. Sneaky

**Height:** 10 inches.

**Weight:** 12 lbs.

**Eyes:** Yellow.

**Hair:** Gray, with black stripes on the end of its tail and the tips of its ears.

**Age:** 83. Time is different in the fog.

**First appearance:** Mr. Sneaky's first appearance is in book #19, when Angela's team explores Howland Island and sees a cat there. He and Dog became good friends.

**Memorable quote:** No speaking lines.

**Home:** Howland Island.

**Safe Haven Status:** Never a member.

**Death:** Mr. Sneaky turned back into dust at the end of book #20. Dog is still traumatized by it. So is Angela.

**Notes:** In the 1930s, cats were introduced to several islands to control rodents, including Howland Island. Abandoned to fend for themselves, the cats went feral and began to reproduce. The lack of food on Howland Island controlled the cat population brutally once the rats were gone. Mr. Sneaky was the last survivor from that awful experiment.

---

N



## Natalie

**Height:** 5'5".

**Weight:** 130 lbs.

**Eyes:** Green.

**Hair:** Black.

**Age:** 20s.

**First appearance:** Natalie's first mention is in book #11 in the list of Eagles and crews. She is on the garden crew. Natalie's first appearance is in book #12 when she is quarantined in the garden area with Theo.

**Memorable quote:** "We're breaking quarantine right now." Natalie pointed at the long line of camp members making the move to the plush cabins of the deck below. Twitchy people slunk toward the stairs with possessions clutched tight.

**Family:** No known family alive.

**Home:** Toronto.

**Occupation before the War:** College student.

**Occupation after the War:** Garden crew member and rookie Eagle.

**Safe Haven Status:** Respected camp member.

**Descendant Status:** Normal.

**Relationship Status:** Was dating Wesley.

**Death:** Natalie was killed in book #12 after she pushed Wesley out of the lifeboat while everyone else was sleeping. Martin knocked her out and then tossed her overboard.

**Notes:** Natalie was the bully in school. She was the girl who hit on the guys with mates. She was the girl who kicked the cat when no one was looking. Natalie was the thief who used a lighter and then deliberately didn't give it back. She wasn't nice at all.

---



## Ned

**Height:** 5'10".

**Weight:** 155 lbs.

**Eyes:** Brown.

**Hair:** Brown.

**Age:** 20.

**First appearance:** Ned's first named appearance is in book #20 when he is talking to Adrian. Adrian and Selina have just killed the pirates trying to get inside the submarine. Ned and his father have been following the submarine in their sailboat.

**Memorable quote:** "We've fought with them a couple of times. There used to be three of us." The shorter man stared up at Adrian in hope and fear. "Have you been fading, too?"

**Family:** Father: Dario.

**Home:** Albany.

**Occupation before the War:** Plumber.

**Occupation after the War:** Ghost trapped in the fog.

**Safe Haven Status:** New camp member.

**Descendant Status:** Normal.

**Relationship Status:** Single.

**Death:** Ned died in book #22 on the smallest pirate ship, along with his father. They were trying to steal the ship and accidentally released the pirate gas. Even after getting out of the fog, they still died in a cloud of green gas. Some fates cannot be changed.

**Notes:** Ned killed the third man who was in the sailboat with them. It was his uncle; Ned shoved him out of the boat and told his father the man fell. Ned thought giving a sacrifice to the fog would get them out of limbo.

---

## Nero

**Also known as:** A worm subject.

**Height:** 6’.

**Weight:** 180 lbs.

**Eyes:** Green.

**Hair:** Black.

**Age:** 42.

**First appearance:** Nero’s first named appearance is in book #19 when everyone is getting a medical checkup on the submarine from Shawn and Harry. Nero was rescued from Reicher’s lab in book #18. He is one of only two survivors from his wing.

**Memorable quote:** “Can we go eat now, please?”

**Family:** No known family alive.

**Home:** Greece.

**Occupation before the War:** Reicher’s lab rat.

**Occupation after the War:** Rescued lab rat.

**Safe Haven Status:** Tolerated member of camp.

**Descendant Status:** Normal.

**Relationship Status:** Single.

**Death:** Still alive as of book #22.

**Notes:** Nero was used as a rat for Reicher’s experiments with diseases like AIDS and cancer. He is immune to almost every known disease, except for parasites. He was severely infected with worms in the lab. Starving to death no matter how much he ate has given Nero an eating disorder even though Harry cured him. He just can’t stop.

---

## Nysus

**Height:** Average.

**Weight:** Average.

**Eyes:** Green.

**Hair:** Red.

**Age:** 5,232.

**First appearance:** Nysus's first appearance is in book #11 when Angela's team makes it to the level two angel area at the Weigh Station.

**Memorable quote:** "I am Nysus. I bring joy."

**Family:** Four brothers: Leeto, Resus, Ercu, Ares.

**Home:** The Weigh Station.

**Occupation before the War:** Weigher of souls.

**Occupation after the War:** Weigher of souls.

**Safe Haven Status:** Never a member.

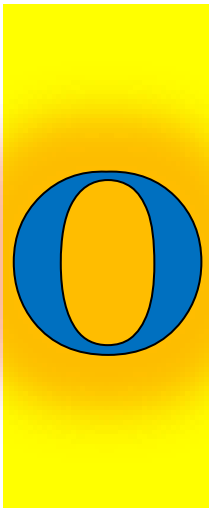
**Descendant Status:** Byzan. Locked.

**Relationship Status:** Unknown.

**Death:** Nysus was killed in book #12 when Angela and her team ascended and took over the Weigh Station. He was burned alive.

**Notes:** Nysus's gold pin is a smiling face. It means untrustworthy.

---



## Older Den Mother

**Height:** Average.

**Weight:** Average.

**Eyes:** Green.

**Hair:** Brown and gray.

**Age:** 68.

**First appearance:** Older Den Mother's first named appearance is in book #22 when she is helping with Goldie's twins while they're at the treehouse clinic for a checkup. She has been in Safe Haven for a year.

**Memorable quote:** The woman started crying. "Please. I never would have helped them. I'm not bad. Please let me stay!"

**Family:** No known family alive.

**Home:** Indiana.

**Occupation before the War:** Retired secretary.

**Occupation after the War:** Den mother.

**Safe Haven Status:** Respected camp member.

**Descendant Status:** Beta with almost no power. Didn't have a shield. Could read minds.

**Relationship Status:** Single.

**Death:** The older den mother was consumed and removed in book #22 by the mission team after it was discovered that she was part of the group who kidnapped Angela's newborn daughter. Older Den Mother didn't participate, but she knew it was being planned and didn't warn anyone.

**Notes:** Older Den Mother escaped from a US lab right after the war. Safe Haven was supposed to be her second chance for helping the scientists torture the other subjects.

---



## Oliver Silverman

**Also known as:** Assistant Director.

**Height:** Average.

**Weight:** Average.

**Eyes:** Brown.

**Hair:** Blonde.

**Age:** 40s.

**First appearance:** Oliver's first appearance is in book #16 when he is collecting Cerise for the meeting on the UN command vessel.

**Memorable quote:** Oliver nodded, going to his chair near the boss, who was watching all of them. "Yes. Ever hear the saying don't bite the hand that's feeding you?"

**Family:** No known family alive.

**Home:** Germany.

**Occupation before the War:** Assistant Director of the entire UN forces.

**Occupation after the War:** Assistant Director to Haussler.

**Safe Haven Status:** Never a member.

**Descendant Status:** Normal.

**Relationship Status:** Having a secret affair with Violet Livingston.

**Death:** Oliver was shot in book #16 by Director Haussler for dereliction of duty and smuggling.

**Notes:** Oliver was upset at the demotion after the war. It made him disloyal to authority.

---

# Oliver

**Height:** 6’.

**Weight:** 190 lbs.

**Eyes:** Brown.

**Hair:** Brown mohawk.

**Age:** 40s.

**First appearance:** Oliver’s first appearance is in book #12 when the UN trap team let Kronus out of the brig on the cruise ship. He’s the leader of that team.

**Memorable quote:** “Of course, I can. You’ll have no gift available for hours and I’m in charge.” Oliver delivered a cruel leer. “You now belong to the UN.”

**Family:** No known family alive.

**Home:** Canada.

**Occupation before the War:** UN fighter.

**Occupation after the War:** Trap team leader.

**Safe Haven Status:** Never a member.

**Descendant Status:** Normal.

**Relationship Status:** Single.

**Death:** Oliver died in book #12 while trying to take over the bridge of the cruise ship. Neil shot him in the head.

**Notes:** Oliver spent eight years in the Hawaii lab, helping the scientists torture subjects. He was glad to get out of there after the war, but he did miss the easy access to unwilling females. And unwilling

males. Oliver didn't care about gender as long as it was by force.

---

## Omar

**Height:** 6’.

**Weight:** 200 lbs.

**Eyes:** Blue.

**Hair:** Blond.

**Age:** 30s.

**First appearance:** Omar’s first appearance is in book #14 when they find Adrian’s ship and try to capture him. Omar is sailing the ship that the pirate captain is on.

**Memorable quote:** “Why are you not following orders?” Omar was third in command and eager to gas all the magic users.

**Family:** No known family alive.

**Home:** The open ocean.

**Occupation before the War:** Sailor and pirate.

**Occupation after the War:** Third in command of the pirate fleet.

**Safe Haven Status:** Never a member.

**Descendant Status:** Normal.

**Relationship Status:** Single.

**Death:** Omar died in book #14 during the battle with Safe Haven for Pitcairn Island. Angela used pain spells that ruptured his spine.

**Notes:** Omar hated magic so much that he was willing to make a deal with the UN to use the poison green gas on them. He didn’t care about the world or conquering anyone. He just wanted all of the magic users gone.

---

## Oric

**Eyes:** Gray.

**Hair:** Black.

**First appearance:** Oric's first and only appearance is in book #19, when Angela is reading through Reicher's journal and finds his note about killing Oric.

**Memorable quote:** No speaking lines.

**Family:** Mother: Marion. Brother: Rico. Twin brother: Reicher. Related to all of the Brady family.

**Home:** Australia.

**Occupation before the War:** In training to take control of the Australian lab.

**Safe Haven Status:** Never a member.

**Descendant Status:** Tracker.

**Relationship Status:** Single.

**Death:** Oric was killed by Reicher in a hand-to-hand death battle long before the war. That's how Reicher inherited leadership of the lab. His father was very proud of him for winning.

---

# Orin

**Height:** 6'6".

**Weight:** 300lbs.

**Eyes:** Brown.

**Hair:** Brown.

**Age:** 3,039.

**First appearance:** Orin's first appearance is in book #11 when Angela's group goes to the Weigh Station. Orin is the angel who lost the bet. Orin was then chosen to give Angela a tour.

**Memorable quote:** "No one keeps us out. We are not bound to the same rules."

**Family:** Four brothers: Itis, Teus, Laistry, Azeez.

**Home:** The Weigh Station.

**Occupation before the War:** Weigher of souls.

**Occupation after the War:** Weigher of souls.

**Safe Haven Status:** Never a member.

**Descendant Status:** Byzan. Locked.

**Relationship Status:** Unknown.

**Death:** Orin died in book #12 when he tried to kill Angela on the cruise ship. Morgan threw his knife into Orin's chest.

**Notes:** Orin's gold pin is a star. It means tyrant. He was descended from giants.

---



## Orlando

**Height:** 6'.

**Weight:** 220 lbs.

**Eyes:** Blue.

**Hair:** Brown.

**Age:** 30s.

**First appearance:** Orlando's first appearance is in book #16 when he tries to kill Cerise while they're on the UN command vessel.

**Memorable quote:** "You didn't hear me because you were in your head."

**Family:** No known family alive.

**Home:** Australia.

**Occupation before the War:** UN Tracker.

**Occupation after the War:** UN Tracker and hired assassin.

**Safe Haven Status:** Never a member.

**Descendant Status:** Tracker.

**Relationship Status:** Unknown.

**Death:** Orlando was killed in book #16 by Cerise when he attacked her. She ripped his guts open with her knife.

**Notes:** Orlando was indeed on drugs, like Cerise suspected, but he would have challenged her anyway at some point. He wanted the title of top tracker and she had it.

---

## Owen

**Height:** 6'3".

**Weight:** 240 lbs.

**Eyes:** Black.

**Hair:** Black.

**Age:** 40s.

**First appearance:** Owen's first mention is in book #18. He is in the cafeteria when Joseph walks by that area. His first appearance is during Greg's medical checkup in book #18. He's the guard on duty.

**Memorable quote:** Owen spoke for the first time. "Your boss wanted you to sink a nuclear submarine?"

**Family:** Numerous twins in the lab.

**Home:** Australia.

**Occupation before the War:** Security office in Reicher's lab.

**Occupation after the War:** Top security office in Reicher's lab.

**Safe Haven Status:** Never a member.

**Descendant Status:** Normal.

**Relationship Status:** Single.

**Death:** Owen was killed in book #18, by Biff. He was stabbed and sliced open with his own knife.

**Notes:** Owen loved his job and his life. He had no compassion for anyone, not even the kids. Reicher kept him around so long because of that. He hoped Owen's attitude would transfer to his kids.

---

P



## Parker

**Height:** 6’.

**Weight:** 190 lbs.

**Eyes:** Aqua.

**Hair:** Greenish blond.

**Age:** 33.

**First appearance:** Parker’s first appearance is in book #21 when he scolds Ralph for stirring up trouble over Biff’s stone warrior.

**Memorable quote:** “You can wait for the enforcer to zap you.”

**Family:** No known family alive.

**Home:** California.

**Occupation before the War:** College professor.

**Occupation after the War:** New leader of the church group.

**Safe Haven Status:** Tolerated camp member.

**Descendant Status:** Water hybrid. They were thought to be extinct by the scientists. Water branches do not have magic to use. They are hybrids of human and fish. Their bodies mutate for survival depending on their environment.

**Relationship Status:** Single.

**Death:** Still alive as of book #22.

**Notes:** Parker has been with Safe Haven since Utah. He was picked up on the same road as Kenn and Charlie, just a few miles apart. He had walked there from California, surviving on rain, a bag of cookies, and good luck.

---

## Paul

**Also known as:** The Rabbit.

**Height:** 5'11".

**Weight:** 160 lbs.

**Eyes:** Blue.

**Hair:** Blond.

**Age:** 30s.

**First appearance:** Paul's first appearance is in book #12 when a small group of soldiers in America come topside from an underground bunker. Paul is the scientist they've brought along to take measurements of the air, water, and ground.

**Memorable quote:** Paul dropped his head. He had read the signs too well. Now that Safe Haven was gone, the government was free to come back up. *"If they're really gone... Mitchels are hard to kill. Everyone knows that. Why doesn't my father?"*

**Family:** Father: Corbin. Child on the way with Tabitha.

**Home:** Hawaii.

**Occupation before the War:** Lab subject and scientist.

**Occupation after the War:** Escaped lab subject and scientist.

**Safe Haven Status:** Never a member.

**Descendant Status:** Beta. Mentalist.

**Relationship Status:** Dating Tabitha.

**Death:** Still alive as of book #22.

**Notes:** Paul was a weak boy who became a weak man, but a few weeks around Alexa Mitchel helped him start changing. Paul is now a good person with a ruthless attitude. He loves his life. He'll kill anyone who tries to interfere with it, even Alexa.

---



## Perry

**Height:** 6’.

**Weight:** 190 lbs.

**Eyes:** Green.

**Hair:** Black.

**Age:** 50s.

**First appearance:** Perry’s first appearance is in book #12 when the camp normals are on the verge of rioting. He’s one of the people demanding to be let off of the cruise ship.

**Memorable quote:** “I’m leaving at dawn. I’ll shoot my way out if I have to.” He shoved around Ellen and disappeared into their cabin.

**Family:** Wife: Ellen.

**Home:** Ohio.

**Occupation before the War:** Shop worker.

**Occupation after the War:** Unemployed.

**Safe Haven Status:** Tolerated member of camp.

**Descendant Status:** Normal.

**Relationship Status:** Married to Ellen.

**Death:** Perry died in book #12 when he left in a lifeboat with the other deserters. They had hoped to take the abandoned UN ship back to land, but the Eagle IDC team had already reclaimed it. Perry died of dehydration.

**Notes:** Perry knew his wife beat their daughter to death after the war and still covered for her. That death also hid the fact that he’d been sexually abusing the child for years. He was glad she was

gone. The only thing that would have made it better for him was if his wife had also died. Total psychopath based loosely on the stepfather of the author.

---

## Phoebe

**Height:** 5'5".

**Weight:** 125 lbs.

**Eyes:** Brown.

**Hair:** Red curls.

**Age:** 20s.

**First appearance:** Phoebe's first appearance is in book #15. She is on ramp guard duty while part of the returning team is getting their decontamination scrub after clearing the island.

**Memorable quote:** "The supplies are gone." Phoebe peered at the shoreline. She and her partner were on ramp duty. It was their first duty alone as rookies. "I didn't see them get picked up."

**Family:** No known family alive.

**Home:** New Mexico.

**Occupation before the War:** College student.

**Occupation after the War:** Rookie Eagle.

**Safe Haven Status:** Respected camp member.

**Descendant Status:** Invisible.

**Relationship Status:** Single.

**Death:** Still alive as of book #22.

**Notes:** Phoebe is afraid of her witch being evil, so she refuses to unlock her gifts. She put up a good fight when Neil insisted, convincing him to give her more time. It will be interesting to see if she was right.

---

## Pimet

**Height:** Average.

**Weight:** Average.

**Eyes:** Blue.

**Hair:** Black.

**Age:** 5,411.

**First appearance:** Pimet's first appearance is in book #11 when Angela's team makes it to the level three area at the Weigh Station.

**Memorable quote:** "I am not evil!" Pimet slammed his hand on the table, rattling dishes. "You are supposed to feel guilt and ask if I can absolve you. I can, you know."

**Family:** Four brothers: Kronus, Cean, Atlas, Romi.

**Home:** The Weigh Station.

**Occupation before the War:** Weigher of souls.

**Occupation after the War:** Weigher of souls.

**Safe Haven Status:** Never a member.

**Descendant Status:** Byzan. Locked.

**Relationship Status:** Unknown.

**Death:** Pimet was killed in book #12 when Angela and her team ascended and took over the Weigh Station. He was stabbed by Romeo.

**Notes:** Pimet's gold pin is a moon. It means coldness.

---

## Piper

**Height:** 5'7".

**Weight:** 130 lbs.

**Eyes:** Brown.

**Hair:** Black.

**Age:** 30.

**First appearance:** Piper's first appearance is in book #17 when she and the other lower level Eagles are in the training room talking about the missing mission men.

**Memorable quote:** "The one where you force a vote on leadership and win this time."

**Family:** Pregnant by Adrian.

**Home:** The Cayman Islands.

**Occupation before the War:** Unknown.

**Occupation after the War:** Level one Eagle on Angela's team.

**Safe Haven Status:** Respected member of camp.

**Descendant Status:** Normal.

**Relationship Status:** Ex of Dace. Dating Adrian.

**Death:** Still alive as of book #22.

**Notes:** Piper has wanted to be with Adrian for years. She is very familiar with the Mitchels and their legacy. I often wonder how she has so much information about the descendants and their history considering that she's a normal.

---



Q

---

There were no names that began with the letter Q  
in books #11-22.

---

R

---



## Raheem

**Height:** 6'2".

**Weight:** 160 lbs.

**Eyes:** Brown.

**Hair:** Black.

**Age:** 30s.

**First appearance:** Raheem's first appearance is in book #12 when Kendle and Adrian are meeting with the Cayman Island survivors who want to join Safe Haven.

**Memorable quote:** "She lies!" Raheem was an inch away from attacking Kendle. "They won't care we were starving. We'll be slaughtered!"

**Family:** No known family alive.

**Home:** The Cayman Islands.

**Occupation before the War:** Shark caller for the tourists.

**Occupation after the War:** Level one Eagle.

**Safe Haven Status:** Respected camp member.

**Descendant Status:** Tracker.

**Relationship Status:** Single.

**Death:** Still alive as of book #22.

**Notes:** Raheem was the only one of his group who was infected with the rage illness.

---

## Raji

**Height:** 6'1".

**Weight:** 200 lbs.

**Eyes:** Green.

**Hair:** Red.

**Age:** 43.

**First appearance:** Raji's first named appearance is in book #19 on Howland Island when his body is discovered. Angela rescued him from Reicher's lab in book #18, along with 14 other military men from the scroll diving wing.

**Memorable quote:** No speaking lines.

**Family:** No known family alive.

**Home:** India.

**Occupation before the War:** Scroll diver in Reicher's lab.

**Occupation after the War:** Unemployed.

**Safe Haven Status:** Never a member.

**Descendant Status:** Naturalist. Nature descendants are either sane or crazy. There is no in between. They are smart and ruthless when crossed. They have a 10% chance of inheriting madness from their father.

**Relationship Status:** Single.

**Death:** Raji was murdered by Goldie in book #19. Goldie stabbed him in the back while the mission men were sleeping on Howland Island.

**Notes:** Raji was one of the military men Kenn tried to save. He was also a violent killer who would have had to be put down in the future.

---

## Randy Miller

**Height:** 5'10".

**Weight:** 185 lbs.

**Eyes:** Blue.

**Hair:** Black.

**Age:** 38.

**First appearance:** Randy's first mention is in book #3 when Adrian calls for Ralph and his sons to help the Eagles. Randy's first appearance is in book #12 during the radiation sickness. He is in the camp living quarters, stressing over his father.

**Memorable quote:** "Do you have a list of the dead?" Ralph's oldest son, Randy, joined Kenn, keeping his hands in view. "An updated list?"

**Family:** Father: Ralph. Three brothers.

**Home:** Utah.

**Occupation before the War:** Miner.

**Occupation after the War:** Unemployed.

**Safe Haven Status:** Respected camp member.

**Descendant Status:** Normal.

**Relationship Status:** Married, unnamed.

**Death:** Still alive as of book #22.

**Notes:** Randy is ashamed of his father, but he understands the choices Ralph made. He just doesn't agree with them. Randy loves Safe Haven and all of their magical defenders. He hopes his father will get a second chance to see how great those people are, but even if he doesn't, Randy isn't

leaving camp. Ralph will be banished without his sons.

---

# Rankin

**Also known as:** Regan.

**Height:** 6’.

**Weight:** 225 lbs.

**Eyes:** Brown.

**Hair:** Black.

**Age:** 30s.

**First appearance:** Rankin’s first appearance is in book #12 when a small group of soldiers in America come topside from an underground bunker. Rankin is in charge of that group.

**Memorable quote:** Rankin shoved Paul out of the way. “Shut up, Rabbit. Corbin might be your father, but you’re useless. Follow my orders or you won’t make it back.”

**Family:** No known family alive.

**Home:** Washington State.

**Occupation before the War:** Soldier.

**Occupation after the War:** Soldier in Corbin’s lab.

**Safe Haven Status:** Never a member.

**Descendant Status:** Normal.

**Relationship Status:** Single.

**Death:** Rankin was killed in the Alexa’s Travels series by Adrian’s daughter, Alexa.

**Notes:** Rankin Regan was an evil man who dreamed of raping a woman while he strangled her. He almost accomplished that with Alexa before she escaped from the Hawaii bunker. Rankin was unstable in every sense of the word.

---

## Reggie

**Height:** 6’.

**Weight:** 200 lbs.

**Eyes:** Blue.

**Hair:** Black.

**Age:** 20s.

**First appearance:** Reggie’s first appearance is in book #15 when Marc’s landing team goes to Pitcairn Island to clear it.

**Memorable quote:** Reggie scowled. “Save it for people you can help. Never waste it.”

**Family:** No known family alive.

**Home:** Denver.

**Occupation before the War:** College student.

**Occupation after the War:** Level One Eagle on Marc’s team and team medic.

**Safe Haven Status:** Respected camp member.

**Descendant Status:** Normal.

**Relationship Status:** Single.

**Death:** Reggie died in book #15. He was crushed by a grounder and then tossed around during the fight with Nature on the ship. A broken rib punctured his lung.

**Notes:** Reggie was secretly in love with Angela. He never told her or anyone else. He was a good man.

---



## Reicher

**Also known as:** Carl Alexander Reicher.

**Height:** 6’.

**Weight:** 130 lbs.

**Eyes:** Gray.

**Hair:** Gray and black.

**Age:** 80s.

**First appearance:** Reicher’s first mention is at the beginning of book #18, when the mission men reach the shore of Australia and are captured. Reicher is the boss on the radio giving the orders. Reicher’s first appearance is during the call between him and Marc right after Marc reaches Cerise’s homestead in book #18.

**Memorable quote:** Reicher shuddered. “Death is a terror that we all share, no matter how hardened we become. As the moment approaches, all facades are stripped away.”

**Family:** Mother: Marion. Brothers: Rico. Twin, Oric. Children: Marc, Thalia, Joseph. Numerous others. Related to all of the Brady family.

**Home:** Australia.

**Occupation before the War:** Leader of the Australian lab.

**Occupation after the War:** Leader of the Australian lab and Secretaries-General of the remaining UN forces.

**Safe Haven Status:** Never a member.

**Descendant Status:** Byzan. Tracker.

**Relationship Status:** Engaged to Cerise. In mourning for Tilly.

**Death:** Reicher was killed at the end of book #18 by Cate and Cody. They ruptured his organs.

**Notes:** Reicher left his mark on Marc. I'm certain we haven't seen the last of him, either. After all, shouldn't Reicher be in Hell when the Eagles go there in book #23 to negotiate for Cate's release?

---

## Renard

**Height:** 5'10".

**Weight:** 140 lbs.

**Eyes:** Brown.

**Hair:** Red and brown.

**Age:** 15.

**First appearance:** Renard's first appearance is in book #14 when he and the other fugitives are hiding from Chuck's men in Port Stanley. Renard wants to warn their coming rescuers about Chuck.

**Memorable quote:** "But they're walking into a trap! Chuck knows we're on this mountain!"

**Family:** No known family alive.

**Home:** Port Stanley.

**Occupation before the War:** Fisherman.

**Occupation after the War:** Unemployed.

**Safe Haven Status:** Never a member.

**Descendant Status:** Tracker.

**Relationship Status:** Single.

**Death:** Renard was killed in book #22 when he went along with Somchai's plan to kidnap Angela and Marc's newborn daughter. Angela took his life force.

**Notes:** Renard never got over the awful death of his parents in Port Stanley. He looked to Somchai as a replacement and then followed that man to his death.

---

## Resus

**Height:** Average.

**Weight:** Average.

**Eyes:** Green.

**Hair:** Red.

**Age:** 5,333.

**First appearance:** Resus's first appearance is in book #11 when Angela's team makes it to the level two angel area at the Weigh Station.

**Memorable quote:** "I am the athletic heart. Resus."

**Family:** Four brothers: Leeto, Ares, Ercu, Nysus.

**Home:** The Weigh Station.

**Occupation before the War:** Weigher of souls.

**Occupation after the War:** Weigher of souls.

**Safe Haven Status:** Never a member.

**Descendant Status:** Byzan. Locked.

**Relationship Status:** Unknown.

**Death:** Resus was killed in book #12 when Angela and her team ascended and took over the Weigh Station. He was shot in the heart by Doug.

**Notes:** Resus's gold pin is a javelin. It means jealousy.

---

## Rico Reicher

**Height:** 6’.

**Weight:** 240 lbs.

**Eyes:** Gray.

**Hair:** Black and gray.

**Age:** 40s.

**First appearance:** Rico’s first appearance is in book #16 when he joins Safe Haven after the atoll battles.

**Memorable quote:** “She didn’t let them go.” Rico had been approved to join. He stared at Kenn in fear. “She killed them all.”

**Family:** Grandmother: Marion. Brothers: Reicher, Oric. Nieces and nephews: Marc, Joseph, Thalia. Related to all of the Bradys.

**Home:** Australia.

**Occupation before the War:** Subject and staff member in Reicher’s lab.

**Occupation after the War:** Escaped subject and rookie Eagle.

**Safe Haven Status:** No longer a member.

**Descendant Status:** Mentalist.

**Relationship Status:** Single. In love with Tonya.

**Death:** Still alive as of book #22. Rico survived being washed out to sea. Tonya doesn’t know yet. Marc does.

**Notes:** Rico played a great role. Almost no one could have matched him with the hardass he became by the time he was washed out to sea. Except for

Angela. She knew him for what, and who, he was as soon as she met him. She allowed him to blend into camp without exposing his family line because of what he'd gone through for his entire life. She wanted him to be able to have a second chance, but it wouldn't have been possible if anyone had known who he was in the beginning. It's the same reason that Adrian didn't tell anyone his brother Brandon was in Safe Haven until he was about to leave.

---

## Roger Mitchel

**Height:** 6'.

**Weight:** 190 lbs.

**Eyes:** Brown.

**Hair:** Black.

**Age:** 55.

**First appearance:** Roger's first mention is in book #22 when it is revealed that he is Alicia's father.

**Memorable quote:** No speaking lines.

**Family:** Children: Alicia, Mia, Patricia's adopted twin sons. Many more.

**Home:** Little Rock.

**Occupation before the War:** Government tracker.

**Occupation after the War:** Escaped government tracker.

**Safe Haven Status:** Never a member.

**Descendant Status:** Tracker.

**Relationship Status:** Single.

**Death:** Roger was killed by a woman he was trying to rape a year after the war.

**Notes:** Roger was a serial rapist who didn't care if the victim was related, young, elderly, or a friend. He was hated by every single member of his family, including his parents.

---

## Romi

**Height:** Average.

**Weight:** Average.

**Eyes:** Blue.

**Hair:** Black.

**Age:** 5,428.

**First appearance:** Romi's first appearance is in book #11 when Angela's team makes it to the level three area at the Weigh Station.

**Memorable quote:** Romi held out a hand. "With the help of hindsight and foresight, you could go back and change the one big mistake that has always haunted you. Just touch me."

**Family:** Four brothers: Kronus, Atlas, Pimet, Cean.

**Home:** The Weigh Station.

**Occupation before the War:** Weigher of souls.

**Occupation after the War:** Weigher of souls.

**Safe Haven Status:** Never a member.

**Descendant Status:** Byzan. Locked.

**Relationship Status:** Unknown.

**Death:** Romi was killed in book #12 when Angela and her team ascended and took over the Weigh Station. He was stabbed to death.

**Notes:** Romi's gold pin is a sun. It means ringleader.

---



## Roy #2

**Height:** 5'11".

**Weight:** 185 lbs.

**Eyes:** Brown.

**Hair:** Bald.

**Age:** 30s.

**First appearance:** Roy's first appearance is in book #12 when his trap team captures Adrian.

**Memorable quote:** No speaking lines.

**Family:** No known family alive.

**Home:** Canada.

**Occupation before the War:** UN Hunter.

**Occupation after the War:** UN Hunter.

**Safe Haven Status:** Never a member.

**Descendant Status:** Tracker.

**Relationship Status:** Dating Wendell.

**Death:** Roy died in book #12 when they tried to capture Angela in the Cayman Islands. It was really Kendle in disguise. She shot him in the chest and then the locals tore him apart.

**Notes:** Roy and Wendell were best friends and lovers. When Sadie killed Wendell, Roy tried to shoot her, but she dove off of the boat. It broke Roy. He didn't care if he lived or died after that.

---

S



## Sabrina

**Height:** Average.

**Weight:** Average.

**Eyes:** Brown.

**Hair:** Blonde.

**Age:** 16.

**First appearance:** Sabrina's first appearance is in book #11 when she and the other women are at Neil's meeting filling out the self-evaluation questions.

**Memorable quote:** No speaking lines.

**Family:** No known family alive.

**Home:** Ciemus.

**Occupation before the War:** Student.

**Occupation after the War:** Fishing crew member and rookie Eagle.

**Safe Haven Status:** Respected camp member.

**Descendant Status:** Invisible.

**Relationship Status:** Single.

**Death:** Sabrina died in book #12 from the radiation sickness.

**Notes:** Sabrina planned to become an Eagle and then chase Marc. She was in love with him. She knew she didn't stand a chance, but she was going to fight for him anyway. She and Kendle had a lot in common. Sabrina had no idea that Biff was in love with her.

---

## Sadie Jones

**Height:** 5'6".

**Weight:** 135 lbs.

**Eyes:** Violet.

**Hair:** Tall blue mohawk.

**Age:** 17.

**Other:** Dark, sun-kissed skin.

**First appearance:** Sadie's first appearance is in book #12 when her trap team captures Adrian.

**Memorable quote:** "I fought in the UN matches and won a lot. I'm also the only female to win a death match against a descendant, without my gifts."

**Family:** No known family alive.

**Home:** California.

**Occupation before the War:** Rookie UN Hunter.

**Occupation after the War:** Rookie Eagle on Angela's team.

**Safe Haven Status:** Tolerated member of camp.

**Descendant Status:** Tracker.

**Relationship Status:** Ex of Jamie and Adrian.  
Dating Panaji.

**Death:** Still alive as of book #22.

**Notes:** Sadie survived her time in the UN by consuming lifeforces and doing whatever they told her to. Now that she's in Safe Haven and she's allowed to have a spine, the rage illness and her natural wildness have put her life in danger again. If the rage illness doesn't kill her, Angela might. Sadie

has been a big disappointment to Angela. I doubt she'll tolerate that much longer.

---

## **Samantha's Sons**

**Also known as:** Todd Jr. and Jeremy Jr.

**Height:** 19 inches/18 inches.

**Weight:** 6 lbs./6.2 lbs.

**Eyes:** Green/Brown.

**Hair:** Brown.

**Age:** 5 months.

**Birthday:** January 20<sup>th</sup>.

**First appearance:** Samantha's sons first appear in book #14 when they are born.

**Memorable quote:** No speaking lines yet.

**Family:** Mother: Samantha. Fathers: Neil and Jeremy. Adopted father: Wade. Step sibling: Amy.

**Home:** Safe Haven.

**Safe Haven Status:** Cherished camp members.

**Descendant Status:** Naturalists.

**Death:** Still alive as of book #22.

**Notes:** Samantha's twins are loved by everyone. They are sweet boys who may grow up to be exactly like their mother.

---

## Sasha

**Height:** 5'7".

**Weight:** 140 lbs.

**Eyes:** Brown.

**Hair:** Black.

**Age:** 50s.

**First appearance:** Sasha's first mention is in book #18 when Joseph walks by the cafeteria where she is sitting. Her first appearance is when she's taking out the rest of Greg's damaged eye during his medical checkup in book #18.

**Memorable quote:** "Too right. We both should have, but that doesn't change the fact that Owen is gone, my sister might die, and I'm the only one left to handle all the medical needs for this floor. I want you to order Subject Seven to help her. If you say no, I'll stop working and you'll have to put me in a cage to keep me from leaving."

**Family:** Sister: Isabel. Numerous sets of twins.

**Home:** Australia.

**Occupation before the War:** Breeder and medic in Reicher's lab.

**Occupation after the War:** Medic and breeder in Reicher's lab.

**Safe Haven Status:** Never a member.

**Descendant Status:** Normal.

**Relationship Status:** Single.

**Death:** Sasha was gassed by Reicher in book #18 for breaking into the computer records to find a way to get Isabel and her twins out of the lab.

**Notes:** Sasha started waking up when Marc's team was brought in. She saw how hard they fought against Reicher and realized she might be that strong, too. It cost her life, but she secured a valuable map for Safe Haven that might help give the world peace at some point. She died a hero despite her awful past.

---



## Saul

**Also known as:** Blue.

**Height:** 6'1".

**Weight:** 225 lbs.

**Eyes:** Green.

**Hair:** Red.

**Age:** 50s.

**First appearance:** Saul's first appearance is in book #16 when he offers to pilot the submarine right after Greg kills Captain Miles.

**Memorable quote:** "I can drive, or crash, anything if given enough time and the right tools."

**Family:** No known family alive.

**Home:** Australia.

**Occupation before the War:** Pilot for UN Director Miles.

**Occupation after the War:** Captain of the nuclear submarine the UN collected right after the war.

**Safe Haven Status:** Never a member.

**Descendant Status:** Tracker.

**Relationship Status:** Widowed.

**Death:** Still alive as of book #22.

**Notes:** Saul was huge, with colorful tattoos over his forearms and neck of ships, planes, bikes, cars. Saul wanted permanent records of his travels. You'd think it was for the memories, but he worried that dementia would hit him the way it had his father. He hopes the visible record will help him navigate those troubled times.

---

## Selina

**Height:** 5'6".

**Weight:** 130 lbs.

**Eyes:** Brown.

**Hair:** Brown with purple streaks.

**Age:** 39.

**First appearance:** Selina's first named appearance is in book #20, while everyone is in the bunkroom trying to figure out how to get the submarine out of the ice. She is one of the caretakers rescued from Reicher's lab in book #18.

**Memorable quote:** "Trust and attachments. The test revealed I would love my kids too much to let them be taken away." She shrugged, misery leaking through her words. "In any other world, that would have been a good thing, but not in Reicher's lab."

**Family:** Missy and Shawn have adopted Selina. She has no other known family alive.

**Home:** Australia.

**Occupation before the War:** Caretaker in Reicher's lab.

**Occupation after the War:** Rookie Eagle.

**Safe Haven Status:** New camp member.

**Descendant Status:** Normal.

**Relationship Status:** Dating Shawn.

**Death:** Still alive as of book #22.

**Notes:** Selina enjoys eating flesh because it keeps her young, but it has nothing to do with her desire to be a mother. She colored her hair and covered

most of her exposed skin with tattoos so no one would notice when she got older. In the lab, aging meant being removed from her job. Becoming the next meal for the breeders would soon follow. She just doesn't want to die.

---

## Selito

**Height:** 6'3".

**Weight:** 150 lbs.

**Eyes:** Blue.

**Hair:** Black.

**Age:** 40s.

**First appearance:** Selito's first appearance is in book #12 when Kendle and Adrian are meeting with the Cayman Island survivors who want to join Safe Haven.

**Memorable quote:** Selito shook his head wildly. "Our population chose a lottery draw. No one was murdered! Every sacrifice was willing."

**Family:** No known family alive.

**Home:** The Cayman Islands.

**Occupation before the War:** Fisherman.

**Occupation after the War:** Level one Eagle.

**Safe Haven Status:** Respected camp member.

**Descendant Status:** Naturalist.

**Relationship Status:** Single.

**Death:** Still alive as of book #22.

**Notes:** Selito sometimes misses eating human flesh, but he would never admit to that. Being around Isabel reminds him of how much he enjoyed it.

---

## Sheldon

**Height:** 5'11".

**Weight:** 180 lbs.

**Eyes:** Brown.

**Hair:** Brown.

**Age:** 40s.

**First appearance:** Sheldon's first mention is in book #12 when Rose is brought into the infirmary because he shot her. Sheldon's first appearance is in the brig of the cruise ship in book #12.

**Memorable quote:** "You're gonna hang me, aren't you?"

**Family:** No known family alive.

**Home:** Texas.

**Occupation before the War:** History teacher.

**Occupation after the War:** Unemployed.

**Safe Haven Status:** Tolerated member of camp.

**Descendant Status:** Normal.

**Relationship Status:** Single.

**Death:** Sheldon hung himself with his belt in book #12.

**Notes:** Sheldon was horrified that he shot Rose by accident. He knew he would never be able to live that down even if Angela let him go. In fact, he was so upset with himself that he refused to take the chance that Angela would let him off the hook, so he handled it himself.

---

## Short Man

**Height:** 5'7".

**Weight:** 150 lbs.

**Eyes:** Brown.

**Hair:** Black.

**Age:** 30s.

**First appearance:** Short man's first appearance is in book #19 when he and some of the other military men are trying to take over the submarine. Short Man was rescued from Reicher's lab in book #18.

**Memorable quote:** Short Man gestured with his gun. "Go on and make her scream. That'll get the door open."

**Family:** No known family alive.

**Home:** Australia.

**Occupation before the War:** Scroll diver in the Australian lab.

**Occupation after the War:** Unemployed.

**Safe Haven Status:** Never a member.

**Descendant Status:** Firewalker.

**Relationship Status:** Single.

**Death:** Short Man was killed in book #19. Gus knocked the man out with a brutal headbutt. Then Isabel and the other caretakers ate him.

**Notes:** Short Man hated his life in the lab, but freedom was too much for him to handle. His mind snapped. Considering the abuse he suffered in the lab, it wasn't surprising. What was surprising is that

he didn't use his gifts during the take over attempt.  
If he had, it might have gone a different way.

---



## Somchai Abbot

**Height:** 6’.

**Weight:** 200 lbs.

**Eyes:** Brown.

**Hair:** Brown.

**Age:** 50s.

**First appearance:** Somchai is heard for the first time in book #14 when he calls for an evacuation out of Port Stanley. His first appearance is in Port Stanley when he and the other fugitives are hiding from Chuck’s trackers in book #14.

**Memorable quote:** “This is Somchai, calling the ship now approaching the Falkland Islands. Please come in. We need help!”

**Family:** Son: Bo. Related to all of the Abbots.

**Home:** South America.

**Occupation before the War:** Banished tracker, escaped lab supervisor.

**Occupation after the War:** Unemployed.

**Safe Haven Status:** Tolerated member of camp.

**Descendant Status:** Byzan. Tracker.

**Relationship Status:** Single. Ex of Amanda.

**Death:** Somchai was killed in book #22 when he took Marc and Angela’s newborn daughter captive. Marc shot him in the stomach. Dog crunched through his ankle. Then Adrian consumed him.

**Notes:** Somchai was banished from the secretive South American compound long before the war for stirring up trouble between the founding families.

He'd been in Port Stanley for a very long time, letting the hatred grow. Angela tried to help him through it with long talks over a chess board, but it only made Somchai more determined to reclaim the authority he lost upon being banished.

---

## Spencer

**Height:** Average.

**Weight:** Average.

**Eyes:** Brown.

**Hair:** Brown.

**Age:** 22.

**First appearance:** Spencer's first and only mention is in book #12 when Marc is filling out his report on the deaths they had that day.

**Memorable quote:** No speaking lines.

**Family:** No known family alive.

**Home:** Arkansas.

**Occupation before the War:** Pig farmer.

**Occupation after the War:** Unemployed.

**Safe Haven Status:** Loved camp member.

**Descendant Status:** Mentalist.

**Relationship Status:** Single. He was watching Maxine, but he was too shy to talk to her.

**Death:** Spencer died in book #12 from the radiation sickness.

**Notes:** In time, Spencer might have taken his place as the camp veterinarian and redeemed that position from the awful reputation it has now.

---

## Stuart

**Height:** 6'2".

**Weight:** 225 lbs.

**Eyes:** Blue.

**Hair:** Sandy blond.

**Age:** 28.

**First appearance:** Stuart's first appearance is in book #17 when he and the other lower level Eagles are in the training room talking about the missing mission men.

**Memorable quote:** "Maybe you need to learn some communication skills."

**Family:** No known family alive.

**Home:** Tennessee.

**Occupation before the War:** Farmer.

**Occupation after the War:** Leader of the brawlers.  
Future town sheriff.

**Safe Haven Status:** Respected member of camp.

**Descendant Status:** Normal.

**Relationship Status:** Single.

**Death:** Still alive as of book #22.

**Notes:** Stuart was one of the last few refugees accepted into Safe Haven while they were in the mountain. He watches them use magic to improve things and save lives and he can't help being jealous. Stuart loathes being a normal. That may cause problems in the future.

---



---

## Tall Man

**Height:** 6'2".

**Weight:** 200 lbs.

**Eyes:** Blue.

**Hair:** Blond.

**Age:** 51.

**First appearance:** Tall Man's first appearance is in book #19 when he and a few of the other scroll divers are trying to take control of the submarine. He was rescued from Reicher's lab in book #18.

**Memorable quote:** The lone mutineer leaned against the bridge door and kept his gun against Jayda's head. "Make them open up!"

**Family:** No known family alive.

**Home:** Australia.

**Occupation before the War:** Scroll diver in Reicher's lab.

**Occupation after the War:** Unemployed.

**Safe Haven Status:** Never a member.

**Descendant Status:** Animaler. A rare 2% of Animalers can also communicate with objects thought to be inanimate. Insanity is inherited from the mother in 15% of animaler births.

**Relationship Status:** Single.

**Death:** Tall Man was killed by Isabel in book #19. She ripped his throat out with her teeth.

**Notes:** Tall Man liked his life in the lab. He wanted to go back. It was his idea to take over the sub. He

was certain there were other labs they could go to  
and he was right.

---

## Tattooed Mother

**Height:** 5'5".

**Weight:** 135 lbs.

**Eyes:** Brown.

**Hair:** Brown.

**Age:** 58.

**First appearance:** Tattooed Mother's first appearance is in book #20 when she and another former breeder from the lab are in the mess of the submarine. They are conspiring to use Charlie to force a reset. Tattooed mother wants to go back to the lab life. She was happy to be rescued in book #18, but it didn't last long.

**Memorable quote:** "Not all of us go foggy. I heard that his oldest son didn't."

**Family:** Twin sons.

**Home:** Australia.

**Occupation before the War:** Breeder in Reicher's lab.

**Occupation after the War:** Unemployed.

**Safe Haven Status:** Never a member.

**Descendant Status:** Normal.

**Relationship Status:** Single.

**Death:** Tattooed Mother was killed by Wade in book #20 as the Eagles fought to retake the submarine. He snapped her neck.

**Notes:** Tattooed Mother didn't mind popping out kids for Reicher in the lab. Once she was rescued, she had to care for those kids. She found that



intolerable in every way. Her favorite meal was dark meat.

---

## Terrance

**Height:** 5'11".

**Weight:** 200 lbs.

**Eyes:** Green.

**Hair:** Blond.

**Age:** 20s.

**First appearance:** Terrance's first appearance is in book #14 when Captain Grant has him on the bridge of the cruise ship for a sailing lesson.

**Memorable quote:** "Do we get them from the medics?" Terrance was hoping he was better at this than sailing. Grant hadn't wanted him to come back and help anymore.

**Family:** No known family alive.

**Home:** Cleves.

**Occupation before the War:** Drive through clerk at McDonalds.

**Occupation after the War:** Failed medic, failed Eagle, failed sailor.

**Safe Haven Status:** Tolerated camp member.

**Descendant Status:** Normal.

**Relationship Status:** Single.

**Death:** Still alive as of book #22.

**Notes:** Terrance isn't a bad person. He just doesn't know what he's supposed to be doing yet. He's tried several things, including sailing the ship. At some point, he'll find a career he's good at. I just hope all the failures don't damage him so much that he turns bad.

---

## Terry

**Height:** 5'10".

**Weight:** 165 lbs.

**Eyes:** Brown.

**Hair:** Brown.

**Age:** 25.

**First appearance:** Terry's first appearance is in book #12 when he tries to save Rose from a gunshot wound.

**Memorable quote:** "Is it because we're not descendants?" Terry was offended. "Because we would never hurt Neil's kids. He knows that."

**Family:** No known family alive.

**Home:** Ciemus.

**Occupation before the War:** Halfway through medical school.

**Occupation after the War:** Level two Eagle and Chief Medical Officer.

**Safe Haven Status:** Respected camp member.

**Descendant Status:** Healer.

**Relationship Status:** In love with Jayda.

**Death:** Still alive as of book #22.

**Notes:** Terry was delighted to find out he's a descendant, but he hasn't forgotten what it felt like when he thought he wasn't. It allows him a level of compassion for the normals that some of them just don't deserve.

---

## Terry #2

**Height:** 5'5".

**Weight:** 115 lbs.

**Eyes:** Brown.

**Hair:** Red.

**Age:** 30s.

**First appearance:** Terry's first appearance is in book #12 when she leaves the cruise ship in a lifeboat with the other deserters.

**Memorable quote:** No speaking lines.

**Family:** No known family alive.

**Home:** Massachusetts.

**Occupation before the War:** Mail carrier.

**Occupation after the War:** Unemployed.

**Safe Haven Status:** No longer a member.

**Descendant Status:** Normal.

**Relationship Status:** Single.

**Death:** Terry died of starvation in the lifeboat in book #12. She was dumped overboard.

**Notes:** Terry walked all the way from Massachusetts to Georgia after the war. As a former mail carrier, she felt more comfortable walking than driving. On the way, she developed a fear of magic. It forced her to leave the cruise ship and ended her life.

---

## Teus

**Height:** 5'11".

**Weight:** 225 lbs.

**Eyes:** Brown.

**Hair:** Brown.

**Age:** 5,322.

**First appearance:** Teus's first appearance is in book #11 when Angela's group goes to the Weigh Station. He is in the first room as a level one.

**Memorable quote:** "He is our captor!"

**Family:** Four brothers: Itis, Orin, Laistry, Azeez.

**Home:** The Weigh Station.

**Occupation before the War:** Weigher of souls.

**Occupation after the War:** Weigher of souls.

**Safe Haven Status:** Never a member.

**Descendant Status:** Byzan. Locked.

**Relationship Status:** Unknown.

**Death:** Teus died in book #12 when Angela and her team ascended and took over the Weigh Station. He was burned alive.

**Notes:** Teus's gold pin is a knife. It means assassin.

---

## Thalia Reicher

**Height:** 5'7".

**Weight:** 130 lbs.

**Eyes:** Blue.

**Hair:** Blonde, ponytailed braid.

**Age:** 27.

**First appearance:** Thalia's first appearance is in book #18 when she and Reicher are observing the subjects on the warehouse floor together.

**Memorable quote:** Thalia snorted scornfully. "All men want to be kings; all women want to be queens. It's who we are."

**Family:** Father: Reicher. Uncles: Oric and Rico. Siblings: Marc and Joseph. Numerous others. Related to all of the Bradys.

**Home:** Australia.

**Occupation before the War:** Conversion technician in Reicher's lab.

**Occupation after the War:** Conversion Manager in Reicher's lab.

**Safe Haven Status:** Never a member.

**Descendant Status:** Tracker.

**Relationship Status:** Was engaged to Corbin. Matched with Marc.

**Death:** Thalia was killed in book #18 by Harry when Marc couldn't do it. Harry strangled her and then snapped her neck in payment for the deaths of the four Eagle rookies she burned alive upon their arrival.

**Notes:** Thalia only wanted the love of her father until Marc's arrival. Reicher's attempts to make them bond worked too well. Thalia wasn't able to concentrate on her job after that. It cost both of their lives when she wasn't ready for the rescue team to arrive.

---



## The Leader

**Height:** 6'2".

**Weight:** 220 lbs.

**Eyes:** Blue.

**Hair:** Red and brown.

**Age:** 44.

**First appearance:** The Leader's first appearance is in book #20 when the oil workers have gotten inside the submarine. He leads his men to the bottom level and finds the cafeteria full of bodies. It's right after the normals knocked everyone out with drugged soup.

**Memorable quote:** "Find a live one. We need a survivor who can tell us how to get home. Don't forget to take their weapons. We need those."

**Family:** No known family alive.

**Home:** New Orleans.

**Occupation before the War:** Oil worker.

**Occupation after the War:** Ghost trapped in the fog.

**Safe Haven Status:** Never a member.

**Descendant Status:** Normal.

**Relationship Status:** Single.

**Death:** The Leader was killed by Wade during the fight in the mess with the oil workers. Wade crunched his throat and then stabbed him in the eye.

**Notes:** As the leader of the oil workers, he was duty-bound to do whatever it took to get them home alive.

He wasn't an evil man; he was just trapped between duty and the fog.

---

## The Musician

**Height:** 6’.

**Weight:** 155 lbs.

**Eyes:** Green.

**Hair:** Sandy blond.

**Age:** 34.

**First appearance:** The Musician’s first appearance is in book #12 on the beach, right before William snaps and kills everyone else.

**Memorable quote:** He only sings.

**Family:** No known family alive.

**Home:** California.

**Occupation before the War:** Unemployed.

**Occupation after the War:** Musician for hire.

**Safe Haven Status:** Never a member.

**Descendant Status:** Normal.

**Relationship Status:** Single.

**Death:** Still alive as of book #22.

**Notes:** The Musician created the Safe Haven legend:

A light in the darkness,  
Safe Haven once stood.  
Sheltering survivors,  
And serving the good.

A place of safety,  
In a harsh new life.  
Honor and duty,

Among the despair and the strife.

Blazing a path of hope,  
Safe Haven Refugee camp came this way,  
Arriving for many,  
In time to be the saving ray.

And then they were gone, vanished,  
Leaving only traces.  
The new world slowly moved on,  
And the survivors forgot their faces.

Years passed in hell.  
Nuclear horror created more doubt.  
It erased from the hurting land,  
All the signs of their route.

Over the years, Safe Haven became myth,  
A dream and rumor,  
Scorned or ignored,  
Treated with humor.

Forgotten by most,  
The signs remain buried,  
And the people in this hell,  
Remain haggard and harried.

But for a few,  
Ignorance remains,  
Of the hope that once was,  
Just after the Final Days.

Under the rubble,  
Carved in the stone,  
Are the notes of Safe Haven,  
To lead people home.

Unable to stay,  
They tried to make amends,  
Guiding survivors,  
To a life free of past sins.

On a tropical isle,  
Civilization still exists,  
Ruled with kindness,  
Not iron fists.

Those left behind mock and scoff,  
Throwing their hands up in denial,  
While endless paradise waits,  
Only for them to reconcile.

---

## The Roberts Boys

**Also known as:** Kendle's distant cousins.

**Height:** 5'5".

**Weight:** 125 lbs.

**Eyes:** Blue.

**Hair:** Black.

**Age:** 14.

**First appearance:** The Roberts boys first appear in book #20, when they are put into the brig on the submarine for theft. Angela rescued them from Reicher's lab in book #18. At some point, they'll have names.

**Memorable quote:** No speaking lines yet.

**Family:** They are identical twins. No other known family alive.

**Home:** Australia.

**Safe Haven Status:** New camp members.

**Descendant Status:** Both trackers.

**Death:** Still alive as of book #22.

**Notes:** Marc feels responsible for the Roberts teenagers. I'm sure he will try to keep them alive. However, he was already warned that the Roberts line has never produced a mentally stable offspring in the history of its existence. When you think about Kendle, that explains some things.

---

## The Stowaway

**Height:** 6'2".

**Weight:** 140 lbs.

**Eyes:** Brown.

**Hair:** Brown.

**Age:** 30s.

**First appearance:** The Stowaway's first appearance is in book #14 when he's dragging Charlie's body to the top deck in a garbage bag to toss him overboard.

**Memorable quote:** No speaking lines.

**Family:** No known family alive.

**Home:** Unknown.

**Occupation before the War:** Exclusive cruise captain.

**Occupation after the War:** Madman.

**Safe Haven Status:** Never a member.

**Descendant Status:** Normal.

**Relationship Status:** Unknown.

**Death:** The Stowaway was shot by Gus before he could toss Charlie off of the ship in book #14.

**Notes:** The Stowaway was from the yacht that had the three goats. Those animals were the only living things the Stowaway hadn't killed on that ship. He was in stage three of the rage illness.

---

## Thomas Jackson Sinclair

**Also known as:** Bear.

**Height:** 6’.

**Weight:** 210 lbs.

**Eyes:** Green.

**Hair:** Curly reddish blond.

**Age:** 33.

**First appearance:** Thomas’s first named appearance is in book #19 when he is giving them a tour of the submarine. He was rescued from Reicher’s lab in book #18.

**Memorable quote:** Thomas had been expecting that question a heap sooner. He had an answer prepared. “I’m a sexist, egotistical sailor with mommy issues.”

**Family:** Distant cousin: William.

**Home:** West Virginia.

**Occupation before the War:** Scroll diver in Reicher’s lab. Before that, engineer in the US Navy.

**Occupation after the War:** Level three Eagle on Angela’s team.

**Safe Haven Status:** Respected camp member.

**Descendant Status:** Mentalist.

**Relationship Status:** Dating Molly.

**Death:** Still alive as of book #22.

**Notes:** Thomas was horrified to be accused of contacting William. He may make it a personal goal to find out who was really doing it.



---

## Tia

**Height:** 5'6".

**Weight:** 155 lbs.

**Eyes:** Green.

**Hair:** Brown.

**Age:** 68.

**First appearance:** Tia's first appearance is in book #12 during a flash to the US, where Sally is in a store celebrating the assumed death of Angela. Tia is one of the locals watching Sally and plotting the future.

**Memorable quote:** "Storm's coming—a big one. Don't get caught in it. Strange things come out of the water now."

**Family:** Granddaughter: Unnamed.

**Home:** Kansas.

**Occupation before the War:** Retired skeet shooter.

**Occupation after the War:** Gun for hire.

**Safe Haven Status:** Never a member.

**Descendant Status:** Normal.

**Relationship Status:** Widowed.

**Death:** Still alive as of book #22.

**Notes:** Tia hopes Safe Haven never returns, but if they do, she plans to fight against them. Tia's daughter was taken by a magic user. She'll never get over that. In her opinion, all descendants need to be removed.

---

## Tilly

**Height:** 5'5".

**Weight:** 130 lbs.

**Eyes:** Brown.

**Hair:** Brown.

**Age:** 40s.

**First appearance:** Tilly's first mention is in book #18 when Saul and the sub crew are hiding. Her first appearance is when they are fighting intruders who are trying to breach their den under the cemetery in book #18.

**Memorable quote:** Tilly snorted at Trevor. "Reicher already has the Ghost. Safe Haven is useless to us now."

**Family:** Husband: Trevor. Son: Gordon.

**Home:** Australia.

**Occupation before the War:** Member of the Australian Resistance Force. Escaped breeder from Reicher's lab.

**Occupation after the War:** Co-leader of A.R.F.

**Safe Haven Status:** Never a member.

**Descendant Status:** Normal.

**Relationship Status:** Married to Trevor. Ex: Reicher.

**Death:** Still alive as of book #22.

**Notes:** Tilly's abuse in the lab caused her to shut off her emotions. She loves her husband and son, but she rarely shows them any warmth. She's terrified that if she allows emotions into her life she'll snap.

She understands sanity is only a few angry moments thick.

---

## Tobias Dormer

**Height:** 6’.

**Weight:** 200 lbs.

**Eyes:** Green.

**Hair:** Gray and brown.

**Age:** 50s.

**First appearance:** Tobias’s first mention is in book #13 when Jordi is telling Joel about the newest prisoners their trap team captured. Tobias was one of them. Tobias’s first appearance is in book #13 when he and the others are watching from their cell in the International Detention Center as the pirates bring in more captives.

**Memorable quote:** *“They’re twitchy. Something is going to happen soon. Keep watching. Find out why they’re scared.”*

**Family:** Wives: Anna and Daniella.

**Home:** Mexico.

**Occupation before the War:** Escaped lab subject.

**Occupation after the War:** Unemployed.

**Safe Haven Status:** Respected camp member.

**Descendant Status:** Byzan. Tracker.

**Relationship Status:** Married to Anna and Daniella.

**Death:** Tobias was killed in book #21 when he made a deal with Nature to kill Angela. He was hit with Jennifer’s death spell. Then Daniella put two bullets in his head.

**Notes:** Tobias charmed Anna and Daniella and forced them to stay with him for two decades. He fell for Nature's tricks in book #21 because he wasn't satisfied with just two wives. He wanted a harem that included Tonya and Tracy. He was very upset that no one forced Tracy to stay when she dropped the baby off.

---

## Toby

**Height:** 4'.

**Weight:** 45 lbs.

**Eyes:** Brown.

**Hair:** Black.

**Age:** 6.

**First appearance:** Toby's first and only mention is in book #12 when Marc is filling out his report on the deaths they had that day.

**Memorable quote:** No speaking lines.

**Family:** No known family alive.

**Home:** Alabama.

**Safe Haven Status:** Loved camp member.

**Descendant Status:** Tracker.

**Death:** Toby died in book #12 from the radiation sickness.

**Notes:** Toby was found during a supply run. His mom stashed him in an orchard, but never made it back to him. He hid in the farmhouse nearby, ate the fruit, and waited for Safe Haven to reach the ocean.

---

## Toshi

**Height:** 6’.

**Weight:** 190 lbs.

**Eyes:** Brown.

**Hair:** Black.

**Age:** 50s.

**First appearance:** Toshi’s first mention is in book #13 when Joel is assigning his team to pick up escaped captives. Toshi’s first appearance is in book #13 when he meets with Jordi after bringing in those targets.

**Memorable quote:** Toshi gave a curt nod. “We all fear what happens when we finish this job for you. As normals, our future is limited.”

**Family:** No known family alive.

**Home:** The open ocean.

**Occupation before the War:** Pirate.

**Occupation after the War:** UN pirate.

**Safe Haven Status:** Never a member.

**Descendant Status:** Normal.

**Relationship Status:** Single. Wanted Kendle.

**Death:** Toshi was killed by Sadie in book #14, by accident. She hit him with a death spell that was meant for Kendle.

---



## Trent

**Height:** 6'1".

**Weight:** 200 lbs.

**Eyes:** Green.

**Hair:** Red.

**Age:** 33.

**First appearance:** Trent's first appearance is in book #12 when he volunteers to help in the infirmary. His first chore is to take a body down to the incinerator.

**Memorable quote:** "Get settled in your assigned cabins. Names have been put on the doors. No whining. We're here to rest and recharge. You don't have to like your bunkmate to sleep with them."

**Family:** No known family alive.

**Home:** Ciemus.

**Occupation before the War:** Delivery driver.

**Occupation after the War:** Den Mother. Former Eagle.

**Safe Haven Status:** Respected camp member.

**Descendant Status:** Tracker.

**Relationship Status:** Single. Dated Jayda for a short time.

**Death:** Still alive as of book #22.

**Notes:** By the end of book #12, Trent was already doing private security duty over Marc. He is now a respected Eagle who retired because he faced too much action in too short a time. He is one of the few surviving redheaded males in the entire series.

---

## Trevor

**Height:** 6'.

**Weight:** 160 lbs.

**Eyes:** Brown.

**Hair:** Brown.

**Age:** 40s.

**First appearance:** Trevor's first mention is when Saul and the sub crew are hiding in book #18. His first appearance is when he is fighting intruders who are trying to breach their den under the cemetery in book #18.

**Memorable quote:** "We've all heard the stories that his alpha is actually the power in that group. And Cerise told us someone else was coming." Trevor was encouraged by the news. "I think we should stay here and wait for them."

**Family:** Wife: Tilly. Son: Gordon.

**Home:** Australia.

**Occupation before the War:** Member of the Australian Resistance Force.

**Occupation after the War:** Co-leader of A.R.F.

**Safe Haven Status:** Never a member.

**Descendant Status:** Normal.

**Relationship Status:** Married to Tilly.

**Death:** Still alive as of book #22.

**Notes:** Trevor helped to rescue Tilly from Reicher's lab. He immediately fell in love with her. When Tilly decided they should join the resistance, Trevor

agreed to make her happy. Now, it's a way of life  
and he wouldn't have it any other way.

---

## Troy

**Height:** 5'3".

**Weight:** 100 lbs.

**Eyes:** Blue.

**Hair:** Black.

**Age:** 13.

**First appearance:** Troy's first named appearance is when he and the other teenagers are locked in the brig of the submarine in book #20 for theft. He was rescued from Reicher's lab in book #18.

**Memorable quote:** Troy lifted his chin against the coming scorn from the other teenagers. "I like to cook."

**Family:** No known family alive. His twin died in the lab.

**Home:** Australia.

**Safe Haven Status:** New camp member.

**Descendant Status:** Invisible.

**Death:** Still alive as of book #22.

**Notes:** Troy was born in Reicher's lab. When they left Australia, it was the first time he had ever stepped onto any surface of the earth other than the tiled floors of that awful place.

---



U

---

There were no names that began with the letter U  
in books #11-22.

---



V

---



## Valerie

**Height:** 5'2".

**Weight:** 100 lbs.

**Eyes:** Green.

**Hair:** Black.

**Age:** 40s.

**First appearance:** Valerie's first appearance is in book #18 in the time pushing room of Reicher's lab, when Gus is brought to test his loyalty.

**Memorable quote:** Valerie had been monitoring his thoughts. No one kept her out unless she let them. "Use the gold knife from the tray. When we give the order, make one quick slice across each neck. We don't want them to suffer."

**Family:** No known family alive.

**Home:** Australia.

**Occupation before the War:** Executioner and time pusher.

**Occupation after the War:** Executioner and time pusher.

**Safe Haven Status:** Never a member.

**Descendant Status:** Alpha. Kronos type.

**Relationship Status:** Single.

**Death:** Valerie was killed in book #18 by Gus. He shoved the knife into her chest instead of killing Goldie's babies. It stopped the time push that Safe Haven felt on their island.

**Notes:** Reicher was holding Valerie's mother and father hostage to get her to do what he wanted. He'd

used that threat for decades. Her parents were killed upon capture. Deep down, I think Valerie knew, but even a false hope is better than no hope at all.

---

## Valerie #2

**Height:** 5'5".

**Weight:** 150 lbs.

**Eyes:** Green.

**Hair:** Brown.

**Age:** 30s.

**First appearance:** Valerie's first appearance is in book #13 when she is locked in Cate's cell with orders to kill the little girl. They are drinking tea.

**Memorable quote:** The frowning instructor held out her cup with shaking hands. "That was mean."

**Family:** No known family alive.

**Home:** Florida.

**Occupation before the War:** UN organizer and lab assistant.

**Occupation after the War:** Lab instructor.

**Safe Haven Status:** Never a member.

**Descendant Status:** Normal.

**Relationship Status:** Single.

**Death:** Valerie was killed in book #13 when Shawn snapped her neck.

**Notes:** Valerie didn't have many skills. The UN decided she would be better served as a testing tool to tempt the younger subjects into killing so they would become corrupt.

---

## Vanessa

**Height:** 5'.

**Weight:** 110 lbs.

**Eyes:** Brown.

**Hair:** Brown.

**Age:** 8

**First appearance:** Vanessa's first and only mention is in book #12 when Marc is filling out his report on the deaths they had that day.

**Memorable quote:** No speaking lines.

**Family:** No known family alive.

**Home:** Unknown.

**Safe Haven Status:** Beloved camp member.

**Descendant Status:** Normal.

**Death:** Vanessa died in book #12 from the radiation sickness.

**Notes:** Vanessa was found during an Eagle run. Kyle almost drove by the house where she was hiding. He lured her out with a candy bar.

---

## Vennie

**Height:** 5'10".

**Weight:** 140 lbs.

**Eyes:** Brown.

**Hair:** Brown.

**Age:** 30s.

**First appearance:** Vennie's first appearance is in book #14 when he and the other Port Stanley men are hunting for the local fugitives who haven't surrendered to Chuck's leadership. He wants to eat their fingers. Vennie is very hungry.

**Memorable quote:** Vennie didn't notice. He tightened his grip on Chuck's girlfriend. "I know you're pregnant! Chuck told me the baby has gifts!"

**Family:** No known family alive.

**Home:** Port Stanley.

**Occupation before the War:** Ocean fisherman.

**Occupation after the War:** Fugitive hunter.

**Safe Haven Status:** Never a member.

**Descendant Status:** Normal.

**Relationship Status:** Single.

**Death:** Vennie was killed in book #14 by Matti's unborn baby when he took her captive. He had a heart attack.

**Notes:** Vennie knew he could control things through the unborn descendant babies. He just wasn't smart enough to know he had to use magic bonds against them.

---

## Vicky

**Height:** 5'6".

**Weight:** 145 lbs.

**Eyes:** Brown.

**Hair:** Auburn.

**Age:** 20s.

**First appearance:** Vicky's first appearance is in book #11 when she admits to taking seeds from the garden.

**Memorable quote:** Vicky came over and leaned against the desk, face puffy. "He's gone. My Whitney is gone!"

**Family:** No known family alive.

**Home:** Vermont.

**Occupation before the War:** Florist delivery service driver.

**Occupation after the War:** Garden crew member and rookie Eagle.

**Safe Haven Status:** Tolerated member of camp.

**Descendant Status:** Normal.

**Relationship Status:** Was dating Whitney.

**Death:** Vicky died in book #12 when she tried to break into the weapons room and was electrocuted by the alarm Kenn put on it.

**Notes:** Vicky was a drama queen. It didn't really matter to her that her boyfriend died. She only cared that he died a hero so she could use that to further herself in camp.

---



## Violet Livingston

**Height:** 5'4".

**Weight:** 110 lbs.

**Eyes:** Blue.

**Hair:** Multi-colored

**Age:** 30s.

**First appearance:** Violet's first appearance is in book #16 when she is being brought to the UN command ship to face a punishment for collecting unauthorized information. She was gossiping about the invasion.

**Memorable quote:** "I'm the top UN contingency analyst. I've been living on the edge for a year. Terror doesn't go away."

**Family:** Father: Joel. Stepsiblings: Joey, Alice, Wyatt, Damon, Grace, Madelyn.

**Home:** Australia.

**Occupation before the War:** UN contingency analyst.

**Occupation after the War:** UN contingency analyst.

**Safe Haven Status:** Never a member.

**Descendant Status:** Normal.

**Relationship Status:** Was dating Oliver.

**Death:** Violet was killed by Greg's hybrid death spell in book #16 while he was fighting Miles. The fast death kept her from being eaten alive.

**Notes:** Violet was the only one of her family that wasn't deranged or evil. She would have made a

good addition to Safe Haven. As it is, the Livingston family only has a few other survivors. That branch may soon die out.

---



W

---

## Wallie

**Height:** 6’.

**Weight:** 200 lbs.

**Eyes:** Brown.

**Hair:** Blond.

**Age:** 30s.

**First appearance:** Wallie’s first appearance is in book #18 when Marc’s team has finally been allowed to see each other after weeks of torture in Reicher’s lab.

**Memorable quote:** The staff member, Wallie, hit Harry with the cattle prod again, even though the man was no longer conscious to respond to the pain. “He hurt Isabel. She and the babies may die now.”

**Family:** No known family alive.

**Home:** Australia.

**Occupation before the War:** Staff member in Reicher’s lab.

**Occupation after the War:** Agent of torture in Reicher’s lab.

**Safe Haven Status:** Never a member.

**Descendant Status:** Normal.

**Relationship Status:** Single.

**Death:** Wallie was killed by Harry in book #18. He bit into the man’s neck and didn’t stop until his teeth snapped together. Then Harry took his life force.

**Notes:** Wallie would do anything Reicher or Thalia ordered. He only cared about making sure he kept his place in the lab. The fact that he enjoyed the pain

of others was secondary to his terror of becoming one of the subjects.

---

## Wendell

**Height:** 5'11".

**Weight:** 180 lbs.

**Eyes:** Blue.

**Hair:** Bald.

**Age:** 30s.

**First appearance:** Wendell's first appearance is in book #12 when his trap team captures Adrian.

**Memorable quote:** Wendell grabbed her by the arm. "The boss said—"

**Family:** No known family alive.

**Home:** Britain.

**Occupation before the War:** UN Hunter.

**Occupation after the War:** UN Hunter.

**Safe Haven Status:** Never a member.

**Descendant Status:** Tracker.

**Relationship Status:** Dating Roy.

**Death:** Wendell grabbed Sadie's arm in book #12 and was consumed by accident. She was very hungry.

**Notes:** Wendell's biggest fear was being consumed by the UN for failing at his job.

---

## Wendy

**Height:** 5’.

**Weight:** 80 lbs.

**Eyes:** Green.

**Hair:** Brown.

**Age:** 12.

**First appearance:** Wendy’s first appearance is in book #15 when the Eagles are trying to get the kids all settled for bed but they keep trying to escape. Wendy hides in the laundry bin.

**Memorable quote:** Wendy scratched at the dried mud on her arm while sweat ran down her neck. None of them were used to the jungle being this warm. “We’re going to get in trouble.”

**Family:** No known family alive.

**Home:** Nevada.

**Safe Haven Status:** Beloved member of camp.

**Descendant Status:** Invisible.

**Death:** Still alive as of book #22.

**Notes:** Wendy joined Safe Haven all the way back in Nevada, in the same group as Tonya. She was found wandering the main strip, looking for her parents.

---

## Wessley

**Height:** 6’.

**Weight:** 200 lbs.

**Eyes:** Brown.

**Hair:** Black.

**Age:** 30s.

**First appearance:** Wessley’s first mention is in book #11 in the list of Eagles and crews. He is on the garden crew. Wessley’s first appearance is in book #12 when he and the other deserters are arguing with the Eagles about leaving the ship.

**Memorable quote:** No speaking lines.

**Family:** No known family alive.

**Home:** Seattle.

**Occupation before the War:** Unemployed.

**Occupation after the War:** Garden crew member and rookie Eagle.

**Safe Haven Status:** Tolerated member of camp.

**Descendant Status:** Normal.

**Relationship Status:** Was dating Natalie.

**Death:** Wessley died in book #12 after he left the cruise ship in a lifeboat with the other deserters. Natalie pushed him overboard when everyone else was sleeping. He ate too much and they didn’t have enough supplies.

**Notes:** Wessley was a buff dude who enjoyed lifting weights more than anything else in the world.

---



## Willie

**Height:** 6’.

**Weight:** 190 lbs.

**Eyes:** Blue.

**Hair:** Red and blond.

**Age:** 40s.

**First appearance:** Willie’s first appearance is in book #12 when his son dies from the radiation sickness. His first named appearance is in book #16 when Angela is scanning him and his wife while they do minor medical duties as rookies.

**Memorable quote:** “Joey’s dead!”

**Family:** Wife: Doris.

**Home:** Atlanta.

**Occupation before the War:** Dump truck driver.

**Occupation after the War:** Rookie medic in training.

**Safe Haven Status:** Respected camp member.

**Descendant Status:** Normal.

**Relationship Status:** Married to Doris.

**Death:** Still alive as of book #22.

**Notes:** His son Joey died in book #12 from the radiation sickness. It drove Willie to become a medic. His wife will follow his example.

---

## Wiser Man

**Height:** 5'8".

**Weight:** 170 lbs.

**Eyes:** Green.

**Hair:** Blond.

**Age:** 30s.

**First appearance:** Wiser Man's first appearance is in book #20 when the oil workers have gotten inside the submarine. Wiser Man stops Killer from hurting Jayda. The oil workers have been following the submarine since it got stuck in the ice.

**Memorable quote:** "I'll kill all of you to get out of limbo. Your lives mean nothing to me. Start talking!"

**Family:** No known family alive.

**Home:** New Orleans.

**Occupation before the War:** Oil worker.

**Occupation after the War:** Ghost trapped in the fog.

**Safe Haven Status:** Never a member.

**Descendant Status:** Normal.

**Relationship Status:** Unknown.

**Death:** Wiser Man was shot and killed in book #20 by Selina.

**Notes:** Wiser Man retained more of his sanity than the others after so long in the fog, but it wasn't enough to give him a second chance.

---



X

---

There were no names that began with the letter X  
in books #11-22.

---



Y

---

## Yvette

**Height:** 5'6".

**Weight:** 135 lbs.

**Eyes:** Blue.

**Hair:** Black.

**Age:** 23.

**First appearance:** Yvette's first appearance is in the tunnels in book #22 as the camp is bugging out from the fire. She's one of the church group members.

**Memorable quote:** No speaking lines yet.

**Family:** No known family alive.

**Home:** London.

**Occupation before the War:** Exchange student at Miami University.

**Occupation after the War:** Rookie Eagle.

**Safe Haven Status:** Respected camp member.

**Descendant Status:** Invisible.

**Relationship Status:** Single.

**Death:** Still alive as of book #22.

**Notes:** Yvette joined the Eagles the same day Angela's baby was born. Yvette wants to protect the kids in camp, but she's terrified of them. She's trying to conquer her fear so she can have a family, too.

---

A blue, stylized letter 'Z' is centered on a vertical yellow bar. The bar has a subtle gradient and is surrounded by a soft, glowing red aura. Below the bar, a thin black horizontal line spans the width of the page.

Z

## Zane

**Height:** 6’.

**Weight:** 185 lbs.

**Eyes:** Green.

**Hair:** White and black.

**Age:** 50s.

**First appearance:** Zane’s first mention is in book #22 when Jayda is talking about her old life. His first appearance will be in a future book when the supply team heads back to America.

**Memorable quote:** No speaking lines as of book #22.

**Family:** Wife: Jayda.

**Home:** New Mexico.

**Occupation before the War:** Trafficker and ranch worker.

**Occupation after the War:** Cult leader.

**Safe Haven Status:** Never a member.

**Descendant Status:** Unknown.

**Relationship Status:** Estranged.

**Death:** Still alive as of book #22.

**Notes:** Zane trafficked Jayda before and during their marriage. He has spent his life using others to benefit himself. I doubt that has changed even though the world ended.

---



## Zane #2

**Height:** 5'.

**Weight:** 75 lbs.

**Eyes:** Green.

**Hair:** Blond.

**Age:** 12.

**First appearance:** Zane's first and only mention is in book #12 when Marc is filling out his report on the deaths they had that day.

**Memorable quote:** No speaking lines.

**Family:** No known family alive.

**Home:** Wyoming.

**Safe Haven Status:** Loved camp member.

**Descendant Status:** Normal.

**Death:** Zane died in book #12 from the radiation sickness.

**Notes:** Zane's most favorite thing in the world was basketball. The Eagles found him in a school gym. As they left, Zane took one of the basketballs. When he died in book #12, he was holding that ball. It had been signed by almost everyone in camp.

---

## Zoey

**Height:** 5'6".

**Weight:** 135 lbs.

**Eyes:** Blue.

**Hair:** Red.

**Age:** 27.

**First appearance:** Zoey's first mention is in book #11 in the list of Eagles and crews. She is on the boat crew.

**Memorable quote:** No speaking lines.

**Family:** No known family alive.

**Home:** Ciemus.

**Occupation before the War:** Fisherwoman.

**Occupation after the War:** Boat crew member and rookie Eagle.

**Safe Haven Status:** Respected camp member.

**Descendant Status:** Invisible.

**Relationship Status:** Single.

**Death:** Zoey died in book #12 when she was shot by Brian. Brian was aiming for Brittani. Zoey also had the radiation sickness.

**Notes:** Zoey was scared of William finding out she was Invisible. That's why she left. As far as I know, no one in Safe Haven or Ciemus ever found out.

---

## Zorie

**Height:** 5'10".

**Weight:** Average.

**Eyes:** Brown.

**Hair:** Mohawk.

**Age:** 30s.

**First appearance:** Zorie's first appearance is in book #12 when he and his trap team are waiting at the Cayman Islands warehouse for Angela to trade herself for their captive.

**Memorable quote:** Zorie chuckled at her attempt to get him to turn against his team. "I'd be honored, but for one problem. I like my job, Boss Lady."

**Family:** No known family alive.

**Home:** France.

**Occupation before the War:** UN hunter.

**Occupation after the War:** Trap team member.

**Safe Haven Status:** Never a member.

**Descendant Status:** Mentalist.

**Relationship Status:** Single.

**Death:** Zorie died in book #12. Kandle bit his finger off. Then he fell off the dock and was eaten by sharks.

**Notes:** Frenchman. Very ugly. It made him mean. By the time the war came, Zorie had already killed more than 50 men, women, and children. He even had orders for some of them.

---

## Zyron

**Height:** 6'2".

**Weight:** 200 lbs.

**Eyes:** Gray.

**Hair:** Black.

**Age:** 30s.

**First appearance:** Zyron's first appearance is in book #12 when he and his trap team are waiting at the Cayman Islands warehouse for Angela to trade herself for their captive. It's really Kendle disguised as Angela.

**Memorable quote:** Zyron, the team XO, ran. "Black widow! Black widow!"

**Family:** No known family alive.

**Home:** Cuba.

**Occupation before the War:** UN hunter.

**Occupation after the War:** Trap team XO.

**Safe Haven Status:** Never a member.

**Descendant Status:** Normal.

**Relationship Status:** Single.

**Death:** Zyron was killed in book #12 by Kendle. She shot him as he ran away, hitting him when he was just three steps from freedom.

**Notes:** Zyron joined the UN forces to keep them from killing his family. After the war, he stayed with the UN to keep them from killing him.

---

# **Characters by Book**

# Book Eleven Characters

Ares	Atlas	Azeez	Blake
Brian #2	Cean	Claire	Corey
Diana	Dion	Drew	Ed
Elijah	Emma	Ercu	Erika #3
Faith	Hailey	Itis	Jonny #5

Katie	Kayla	Kronus	Laistry
Leeto	Lila	Lydia	Macy
Madison	Martin	Melanie	Michael #4
Natalie #2	Nysus	Orin	Pimet
Resus	Romi	Sabrina	Teus
Vicky	Wessley	Zoey	

---

## Book Twelve Characters

Albert	Amber	André #3	Blair
Bobby #5	Boris	Boutros	Cassie
Cayman King	Cecilia #2	Chuck	Cindy
Clifford #2	Corbin	Cris #6	Dag
Daisey	Dina	Dirk	Doris
Ellen	Ellie #2	Gail	Gina #2

Ginny #3	Gloria	Hannah #2	Heather #2
Jamie	Javier	Joey #4	Joyce
Leo	Lim	Linda	Lorna
Maliki	Mandy #2	Maxine #3	McClery
Megan #2	Michael Mitchel #5	Oliver #2	Paul #2

Perry	Raheem	Randy	Rankin
Roy #2	Sadie	Selito	Sheldon
Spencer	Terry #1	Terry #2	The Musician
Tia	Toby	Trent	Vanessa
Wendell	Zane #1	Zorie	Zyron

---

## Book Thirteen Characters

Alexander	Anna	Bernice	Bob #6
Cate	Crissy #7	Daniella #4	Darren #2
Francesca	Gabe	Joel #5	Joey #6
Jordi	Kane	Kim #2	Laura
Laura's Nieces	Tobias	Toshi	Valerie #1

---



## Book Fourteen Characters

Bo #7	Chuck #2	Copycat Killer	Erin
Hawk	Isaac #2	Krieger	Lisa
Matti	Megan #3	Omar	Renard
Samatha's Twins	Somchai	Terrance	The Stowaway
Vennie			

---

## Book Fifteen Characters

Amira	Biff	Chad
Christian #5	Darren #3	Dutch
Ester	Eugene	Hank
Harold	Keith #2	Mary Jo
Phoebe	Reggie	Wendy

---

## Book Sixteen Characters

Albert	Cerise	Darwin	Denese
Doris #2	Goldie	Haussler	Hazel
Jacob	Jade	Justin	Lowan
Miles	Oliver #3	Orlando	Rico
Saul	Violet	Willie #4	

---

## Book Seventeen Characters

Candy's Twins	Dace	Hannah #3
Jack #3	Megan #4	Piper
Stuart		

---

# Book Eighteen Characters

Gordon	Grace #2	Isabel
Joseph #7	Marion	Owen
Reicher	Sasha	Thalia
Tilly	Trevor	Valerie #2
Wallie		

---

## Book Nineteen Characters

Alfonso	Bret	Front Man
Gio	Harvey	Jack #4
Mel	Mr. Sneaky	Nero #2
Oric	Raji	Short Man
Tall Man	Thomas #3	

---

## Book Twenty Characters

Dario #3	Duke	First Mother
Killer	Longhaired Mother	Ned
Selina	Tattooed Mother	The Leader
The Roberts Boys	Troy #2	Wiser Man

---

## Book Twenty-One Characters

Amos	Curtis	Dari #4
Dave	Marri	Mathew
Parker		

---



## Book Twenty-Two Characters

Alicia	Amanda #3	Karleen
Margret	Older Den Mother	Roger #2
Yvette	Zane #2	

---

# Timeline and Locations

As I started gathering the list of locations, I realized it wasn't right to only mention where Safe Haven has been and not include what they've gone through. It felt disrespectful, so the timeline has become a recap of each book with all of the major events in the character's lives, arranged in order by date! If you have not read the books all the way up to #22, you are about to be hit with **a lot of spoilers**.

# Book 1 Recap

## **December 22<sup>nd</sup>**

A nuclear world war kills billions. Governments go underground, drafting millions while the world collapses. We meet the main characters as they struggle to survive the start of the apocalypse.

-California. Adrian's horrible secret is being revealed when the house above them crumbles, burying everyone.

-New Mexico. Kenn is searching for Charlie while their Marine base is being evacuated and overrun.

-Ohio. Angela is having a miscarriage.

-The Pacific ocean. Kendle's cruise ship is flipped by a tidal wave.

-Wyoming. Samantha is drafted by the government and survives the chopper crash only to be taken captive by two brothers who immediately abuse her.

-Virginia. Marc escapes being drafted and blinded as a bomb blast hits south of his location.

### **January 1<sup>st</sup>**

-Outside Bonneville, Wyoming. Samantha and her abductors hide from slavers who have come up from the south. Taking advantage of a snow storm, Samantha kills the men who have held her captive since the government chopper crashed.

### **January 6<sup>th</sup>**

-Outside Williamsburg, New Mexico. Kenn kills the ill men trying to capture Charlie so they can use his blood for a cure. Charlie is hiding his gifts from Kenn. Kenn is not heading back to Ohio to collect the boy's mother.

### **January 18<sup>th</sup>**

-Cincinnati, Ohio. Angela is dealing with a group at the local college who are trying to force her to stay with them. She's also trying to recover from the miscarriage while making plans to go find Charlie. Angela knows she will have to face her abusive partner at the end of the journey. She calls for help.

### **January 28<sup>th</sup>**

-West Virginia. Marc and Dog survive a bridge collapse. Angela's mental call gives him a reason to keep living. The magic use rattles the lock on his own gifts, though Marc doesn't recognize it at the time.

### **January 29<sup>th</sup>**

-Outside Trinidad, Colorado. Cesar, the leader of the slavers, is planning the next infiltration and attack. He is trying to conquer America, one town and birth at a time. Cesar uses Jennifer, his slave, to get Rick to keep betraying his own people.

-Utah. Safe Haven Refugee Camp. Adrian is guarding his herd and training his Eagles while searching for other magic users. He has sex with Tonya but reveals it's only a one night stand. And thus, her hatred is born.

### **February 2<sup>nd</sup>**

-NORAD Colorado. Samantha searches the complex that has been breached and destroyed by the slavers. She gives mercy to the former Press Secretary who was left alive because he was already dying a miserable death from radiation exposure. Samantha is bitten by a spider.

### **February 6<sup>th</sup>**

-Cincinnati. Angela fights Warren and the college men, winning by using her magic for the first time in decades. She leaves to go find her son, starting a trip that will turn out to be her magnum opus.

### **February 10<sup>th</sup>**

-Marc reaches Angela's old home in Cincinnati and kills Warren, who is waiting for him in hopes that it will draw Angela back. Marc is able to mentally call

for Angela, providing another clue to his descendant status.

### **February 11<sup>th</sup>**

-Wyoming. John and Anne, a doctor and a nurse, are making plans to leave their ranch. John is ill and hiding it from his wife. He needs to get her somewhere safe before he dies.

### **February 14<sup>th</sup>**

-Marc and Angie are reunited in Indiana. He saves her from Dean and Dillan, but she refuses to let him kill the evil men, setting up a chain of events that now can't be stopped.

### **February 15<sup>th</sup>**

-Devils Head, Colorado. Samantha is doing self-surgery on her infected spider bite. This is where she develops an addiction to morphine. Wolves outside are stalking her. Samantha ends up fighting the wolves in a vicious battle that shows her she can survive whatever is thrown at her.

### **February 16<sup>th</sup>**

-Near Roosevelt, Utah. Safe Haven is attacked by a large flock of birds. Kenn steps up and saves a bus full of kids, earning his place by Adrian's side. John and Anne join the camp as Safe Haven's first doctor and nurse. Kenn starts noticing Tonya. Zack, another wife-beater, takes steps to become Kenn's

right hand man. The Eagles hate it that Kenn is being given the job of camp XO.

### **February 18<sup>th</sup>**

-Kendle is adrift on the Pacific Ocean. Her sister is dead and she is alone, slowly going mad. She kills a shark and keeps trying to find land.

### **February 23<sup>rd</sup>**

-Illinois. Angela picks up Samantha's warning about a storm coming. Marc starts giving Angela self-defense lessons. She warns Kenn about the coming storm. Dean and Dillan are watching the couple and biding their time.

### **February 24<sup>th</sup>**

-Safe Haven, near Kemmerer, Wyoming. Kenn lets Adrian think he has a gift for foretelling bad weather. They take shelter from the snow in a bowling alley. More refugees join them. Adrian figures out Charlie is a descendant. Seth is looking through refugees for his missing family. Kenn and Tonya start their affair.

### **February 25<sup>th</sup>**

-Kendle's boat washes up on the small beach of Pitcairn Island. She's found by Luke, an outcast who came here to hide from his past. Luke rushes her to the town's only doctor. A bond forms between them right away.

### **March 5<sup>th</sup>**

-Outside Versailles, Illinois. Angela kills for the first time. That hard shell over her emotions starts to spread. She and Marc are getting closer. Both of them want to restart their old relationship, but honor keeps her from doing it because she knows Kenn is still alive. She's also terrified that Kenn will kill Marc.

### **March 7<sup>th</sup>**

-Safe Haven is in the middle of Wyoming. They are hit by a huge dust storm. Adrian tells Seth he isn't sure about making him an Eagle. Charlie starts working with the vet, Chris. Kenn keeps cementing his place in camp while avoiding Charlie's demands that they go find his mother. Neil and Becky are flirting at this point. Peggy, Becky's mother, encourages it so Becky will be with a top-level Eagle and always be safe. Doug starts noticing Peggy. Adrian sees more signs that Charlie is a magic user.

### **March 10<sup>th</sup>**

-Boulder, Colorado. Samantha sees the slavers and hides as they roll by. She is almost killed by snakes and once again escapes.

### **March 11<sup>th</sup>**

-Pitcairn Island. Luke and Kendle take shelter in his bunker from a tropical storm. Luke's feelings for her have grown until she's the only thing he wants.



Luke's clock is ticking. He knows he's going to die soon.

### **March 18<sup>th</sup>**

-Marc and Angie are somewhere in Missouri. They face a tornado and a mudslide. They grow closer while still trying to do the right thing. Marc has become obsessed with her again, like when they were kids. Angela lets Marc hold her and falls asleep in his arms. It's the first time she's felt safe since they were split up 15 years ago.

### **March 19<sup>th</sup>**

-Cesar's slavers are camped on highway 287. Dean and Dillan join Cesar and bargain for his help to capturing Angela. They make plans to infiltrate Safe Haven since it's clear that's where she and Marc are headed.

### **March 21<sup>st</sup>**

-Safe Haven is in the Thunder Basin National Grasslands. Kenn and the Eagles are sent out to rescue a group of survivors at a school. They miss Samantha by ten minutes.

### **March 22<sup>nd</sup>**

-Pitcairn Island. Kendle has a tense moment with the store clerk, Mary Jo, about Luke. Kendle and Luke are getting closer now and worrying about their homeland. No one on Pitcairn knows for sure

what has happened, though they suspect it was a nuclear world war. Luke tells her about his past.

### **March 23<sup>rd</sup>**

-Angie saves Marc from a bridge collapse in western Missouri. They admit their feelings, but she refuses to get physical. Her fear of Kenn is always in her mind now as she gets closer to being reunited with him and her son.

### **March 26<sup>th</sup>**

-South Dakota state line. A small earthquake rattles Safe Haven. Kenn tells Adrian he has to leave for a while. It's to go meet Angela. He isn't sure if he'll bring her back to camp or kill her to keep everyone from finding out what kind of man he was before the war. Tonya tries to secure her hold on him before he leaves.

### **March 28<sup>th</sup>**

-Pitcairn Island. Kendle refuses Ethan Kraft's advances and makes an enemy of him. She and Luke discuss a physical relationship. Kendle realizes she loves him.

### **March 29<sup>th</sup>**

-Cheyenne. Samantha is captured by the slavers. Rick is sent to infiltrate Safe Haven with Samantha, who is the perfect cover.

### **March 30<sup>th</sup>**

-Marc and Angie meet the giants, Max and Lenore, near Chadron, Nebraska. They fight wolves. Angela uses her magic openly. She and Marc have their first physical moment since being reunited.

### **April 1<sup>st</sup>**

-Angela is reunited with Kenn. He and Marc fight. Rick and Samantha find them. Kenn takes all of them to Safe Haven in the Black Hills of South Dakota where Angela and Adrian meet. They share a powerful vision of the future. Angela is reunited with Charlie. Marc meets his son.

-The Eagles start seeing signs of what Kenn is hiding. Rick blends in to wait for the right time to cause problems. Kenn's supporters start giving Marc a hard time, trying to get him to leave. Samantha tells Adrian she thinks Rick was sent to infiltrate the camp. Angela tells Tonya she can have Kenn.

### **April 2<sup>nd</sup>**

Marc and Neil start becoming friends. Becky and Neil make plans to meet up. Marc beats Doug in the ring. Angela works with the vet, and starts his obsession with her. She uses her gifts for Adrian to look for problems. Neil takes Marc to an Eagle tryout. Ray is forced to admit he's been lying to everyone. Adrian tells Neil he can have Becky. Angela continues to pull away from Kenn and gain the confidence to be free.

### **April 3<sup>rd</sup>**

-Neil notices Samantha. Jeremy, Neil's XO, sees it and starts plotting to put them together. None of Neil's team wants him with Becky. Angela agrees to help Adrian with the dream. She finds out who he really is and that his father triggered the war. Angela practices her skills on the Eagles. The slavers call, demanding Safe Haven's surrender. Rick starts leaving messages for Cesar, buried under his tent. Dean and Dillian are stalking the camp.

### **April 4<sup>th</sup>**

-Angela realizes the slavers are coming for her and Charlie. Adrian and Marc start planning how to kill them all. Angela joins the Eagles for a training session. The camp is slowly becoming aware of her being different. She's fighting back against Kenn; the Eagles are seeing more signs of him being abusive. Adrian tells Angela he wants a female army too. She agrees to be the first one of them who will lead the others in.

### **April 5<sup>th</sup>**

-Rapid City Airport. Angela helps to bring in a group of college student survivors. Marc saves Angie from Dean and Dillian and almost dies. She uses her gifts in front of the Eagles to save his life. Adrian stops communicating with the government here. He sees what the future might hold now that Angela is in his camp. He already wants her.

-In the deleted scenes we find out the government triggered the war to hide a centuries-old secret.

# Book 2 Recap

## April 5<sup>th</sup>

-Sturgis, SD. Safe Haven makes camp for the night. Angela has her first gun test. Other females come to watch it, already being drawn in. Kenn realizes Tonya was right about Angela being brought into the chain of command.

## April 6<sup>th</sup>

-On 34, near Union Center, South Dakota. Angela dreams about the slavers and tells Adrian he needs to talk to Samantha about it. Marc and Angela do their morning workout. They watch an Eagle matchup. Neil insults her. Angela asks to join the Eagles. Marc is noticing how fast Angela is able to trust Adrian and getting jealous.

-Adrian talks to Samantha. She agrees to use her weather gift to help him protect the camp. Neil shows more signs of interest in her. Kyle and Neil start training Angela to be an Eagle. Kenn and Zack conspire against Marc and get him in trouble with an old picture. Angela saves the camp by warning Adrian about a mudslide. The slavers get closer.

## April 7<sup>th</sup>

-Pitcairn Island. Kendle and Luke see signs that the Mayor is going crazy. He's talking about ghosts. Kendle meets Ethan's crazy sister, Jenna, who wants Kendle to kill their father. Everyone on Pitcairn is unstable.

### **April 8<sup>th</sup>**

-Near Plainview, SD. Neil's team starts matchmaking with him and Samantha. Becky sees it. John's cancer is getting worse. Doug hasn't told anyone he has diabetes. The Eagles stand up to Kenn over Angela. Cynthia, the reporter, is still trying to figure out who Adrian really is. Rick makes friends with Mitch, the drunkard who runs the radio. Angela faces her fear of being hit to attend her first kai lesson. Samantha sees it and asks for lessons too.

### **April 9<sup>th</sup>**

-Marc and Kenn fight over Kenn's treatment of Angela. They're sent to the vet for a day of hard labor. Angela starts bonding with the Eagles through games and training. Becky throws a mudball at Neil, misses, and hits Adrian. Dog warns Adrian the wolves around them are dangerous, to be careful. Camp meeting where Angela is introduced as their second doctor, the mountains are introduced as a place to spend the winter, and plans are revealed for handling a slaver attack. Angela asks Marc to wait for her while she becomes an Eagle. Samantha

warns them of a flood. Adrian calls a bugout. Safe Haven has 200 people now.

### **April 10<sup>th</sup>**

-Near Howes, South Dakota. Kenn gets back from a recon run and reveals the slavers are close and they have a tank. They'll be here by dawn. Leadership sends the camp on and sneaks out to meet up at the empty campsite. Angela goes too. Adrian defends her right to stay when Marc and Kenn protest. They sabotage a bridge and get rid of the tank. The flood cuts off the slavers, buying Safe Haven time to get away.

### **April 11<sup>th</sup>**

-Pitcairn Island. Kendle dreams about going home. She and Luke are now clinging to each other for comfort. They attend a town meeting and talk about the war. Kendle and Luke are the only ones who want to go back and help their countrymen. Ethan's jealousy reaches a peak. Kendle and Luke find a body and realize there's a killer on the island with them.

### **April 12<sup>th</sup>**

-Paralleling 73 near Buffalo Gap, SD. Angela leaves camp on her first quiet mission with Adrian and the top Eagles. They bring back a group of nuns. She saves Adrian from a snake. Kenn and Marc are both furious that she left camp. Adrian has her handle getting the new people settled into the QZ, training



her openly now. Angela and Samantha talk, starting their friendship and encouraging Samantha to join the Eagles despite her secret. Adrian opens Eagle tryouts to females. Tonya shows signs of intelligence that no one suspects. Becky is spending time with Rick to make Neil jealous.

### **April 13<sup>th</sup>**

-SD National Grasslands. Angela joins the Eagles officially. Samantha and Neil bond while babysitting. Angela leaves on a training run with the Eagles. Hilda and Peggy try to get Angela to be their female champion for women taking over the world. Charlie and Matt get drunk. Marc hides it from Angela.

### **April 14<sup>th</sup>**

-Angela gets her Eagle jacket. Kenn finds out Charlie is Marc's son. Kenn snaps, grabbing Angela by the throat and threatening her in front of Adrian and the top Eagles. He is arrested and flees during a tremor.

### **April 15<sup>th</sup>**

-Dean infiltrates the foggy camp and almost kills Angela. Kenn saves her and is let back into Safe Haven. Tonya welcomes him home. Angela confronts Adrian about his plan to give her leadership. The Eagles tell Kenn to walk the line or they'll remove him.

## **April 19<sup>th</sup>**

-Near Arthur, Nebraska. Angela uses her injury for a medical training class, angering Marc again. She finds out he didn't tell her Charlie got drunk and sets him up for an Eagle beating, showing a sign of how ruthless she can be. Becky offends the Eagles and makes Neil certain he can't be with her. Jeremy realizes he wants Samantha too. Becky sees Rick spying and doesn't tell anyone.

-Jeremy makes Neil so jealous that he finally asks Samantha to dinner. Marc asks Angela to resign from the Eagles. It's causing fights, with half of the camp also wanting her to quit. Neil and Samantha have a kia lesson. He asks her for more time so he can pick between her and Becky. Neil tells Becky to stay away from Rick.

-On Pitcairn Island, Kendle has another nightmare about going home. They go to the crazy lady's house while trying to figure out who the killer is. Luke is a suspect now and the town is frightened. They take shelter in a cave and make love. Ethan sees them.

## **April 24<sup>th</sup>**

-Near McCook. Neil finds out Samantha is hiding something. The Eagles can't figure out how the slavers are able to follow them so easily. Angela rides in the lead rig for the first time, angering Kenn and Marc. Angela can't take the fighting among the

Eagles anymore. She tells them she'll resign if she loses her cage match. Neil kisses Samantha, thinking it's Becky. Angela tells Kenn she needs him to take a dive in the level test. He refuses to hit her, even for that, and points her toward Zack, who will.

-On Pitcairn, Luke is arrested for the murder and Kendle is taken captive in the tunnels by Ethan.

### **April 26<sup>th</sup>**

-Crescent Lake Refuge. Angela and Adrian are growing closer while she and Marc are drifting apart. Angela wins her cage match against Zack and passes her first level test. Rick blackmails Maria, the cook, to help him with plans to kill Adrian. Then he rapes her. Angela attends the Eagle afterparty. Neil kisses Samantha again.

### **April 28<sup>th</sup>**

-100 Miles Southeast of Chadron, Nebraska. Becky and Angela talk about Becky joining the Eagles. Angela tells her she'll never be one as long as she's playing with their enemy. Angela and the Eagles leave on the run to clear the packs of wild dogs and wolves, and to make contact with Max and Lenore to bring them back to Safe Haven. The convoy is hit by a mudslide.

-While they're gone, Rick puts a snake in Adrian's tent. He gives Becky a vial of chemicals that will knock Neil out and let him be found in her bed, forcing him to marry her. Angela and the Eagles find Max and Lenore dead. They clear out the wolf problem. Angela has a fight with the leader of the pack that changes her in everyone's eyes, including her own. Angie and Marc become an official couple.

-Neil and Jeremy both go to Samantha's tent when they return, having their first fight over her. They find out Ray saved Adrian's life while they were gone. They realize someone is trying to kill him. Angela tells Lee, a top Eagle, where his missing wife is. Mitch defends his friendship with Rick.

### **May 1<sup>st</sup>**

-Swanson Rec. Area, Nebraska. Angela evaluates Tonya's relationship with Kenn, on Adrian's orders. She sees Tonya's value right then even though the redhead hasn't seen it for herself yet. Seth gets hit with a pickaxe by cannibals in McCook. Angela takes over his shifts on Eagle duty. Angela denies entry to an evil refugee, shocking Adrian and the Eagles. Until then, they hadn't been sure she would refuse to let anyone in. Neil and Kyle reach out to Ray because he saved Adrian's life while they were gone.

### **May 2<sup>nd</sup>**

-Pitcairn Island. Ethan tortures Kendle until her gifts unlock, though she doesn't know that's what's happening. She can't escape and doesn't have spells yet. Tracking her, Luke rescues Kendle from the cave. Kendle kills Ethan. Luke convinces Kendle not to give up on herself or on him.

### **May 7<sup>th</sup>**

-Cedar Bluff State Park. Adrian and Kenn are trapped in a car wreck that was meant to kill them. Marc and Angela rescue the two men. There's a riot in camp because people think Marc did it. Adrian regains control. Angela does open guard duty over Adrian for the first time. Marc and Adrian plan the final battle with Cesar and his slavers.

### **May 10<sup>th</sup>**

-Near Hays, Kansas. Samantha figures out how Rick is communicating with the slavers. Neil and his team go to their old camp site to find the proof. Rick flees, leaving Maria to face their wrath alone. Marc confronts Adrian about his secrets. Cesar calls and demands a full surrender or he'll attack. Everyone waits for the battle to start.

### **May 11<sup>th</sup>**

-In the slaver camp, two miles away. Jennifer saves Cesar's life. Cesar takes off after the fleeing leaders of Safe Haven, like Marc and Adrian hoped he would when they made the plan.

### **May 12<sup>th</sup>**

-Ellsworth County rest stop. Angela is shot by Cesar during the massive, bloody battle. Cesar is killed by Cynthia. The Slavers are beaten. This was the first huge victory for the Eagles. Without it, the rest of their accomplishments wouldn't have happened. No one knows if Angela will live. Marc is on the way.

### **May 13<sup>th</sup>**

-Ellsworth Country Club. Marc confronts Adrian about his feelings for Angela. Adrian sleeps with Cynthia and makes her an Eagle. Rick's group of surviving slavers attack the country club where Angela is recovering and set it on fire.

### **May 16<sup>th</sup>**

-Back in Safe Haven, Rick kidnaps Samantha and Becky. Seth rescues Becky while she's being raped. Becky shoots and kills Rick. She has them burn the building and his body, which prevents his soul from gaining the afterlife. His ghost immediately begins to gather strength from haunting travelers. Over time, it becomes murder and allows him to regain his human form. He is killed for good four years later by Alexa Mitchel in the Alexa's Travels series.

### **May 17<sup>th</sup>**

-Near Glendale, Kansas. Anne tells John she knows he's dying. Cynthia is now a hero in camp. She does guard duty over Adrian. She's the third female

Eagle, though most of the camp doesn't know about Samantha yet. Safe Haven now has 300 people.

-Dog tells Adrian to convert lost souls, which is against the rules. It makes Dog a target. Samantha tells Neil and Jeremy that she doesn't want either of them, sacrificing her desires to stop them from destroying their team. Zack protects Ray instead of joining his abusers. Jeremy and Neil resign from the Eagles.

# Book 3 Recap

## May 17<sup>th</sup>

-Near Glendale, Kansas. Angela is doing better now. Kenn asks her to forgive him for the past. The Eagles turn on Kenn, even Zack, as they find out he let her get stabbed by Dean and almost didn't save her at all. His past abuse is common knowledge now. They accuse him of being too busy stalking Angela to see what Rick was doing. Charlie threatens Kenn, standing up to him for the first time in his life. Seth tries to help Becky recover. He blames Neil for everything.

-Kyle rescues Jennifer from the other slaves. He stays behind with her while the other Eagles head back to camp with the survivors and the body of their fallen Eagle.

## May 26<sup>th</sup>

-Near Hutchinson. Badger and his group attack Safe Haven. Charlie uses his gifts openly. Adrian makes plans to rescue the kids the rest of Badger's group are selling. Kyle comes back to camp, but he goes against his team to keep Jennifer isolated.

## May 31<sup>st</sup>



-Outside Wichita, Kansas. Adrian finds out Jennifer has gifts. The Eagles now have female rookies who only want to make it onto the all-female team. Becky shows signs of being a danger to herself and everyone around her. Charlie tells Angela and Marc about Kendle and the island. Charlie and Matt argue about his drinking problem. Charlie and Dog save Jennifer from the former slaves. They start becoming friends.

### **June 1<sup>st</sup>**

-A sinkhole in camp kills two of Adrian's lovers and almost kills a camper full of their orphans. This is when they realize something, Nature, is targeting them all for death. They hold a funeral for the Eagles who died fighting the slavers. Matt is punished for letting Rick use the radio in exchange for alcohol.

### **June 2<sup>nd</sup>**

-Wichita, Kansas. Adrian puts Marc in the cage against four of the top fighters. Marc and Angie almost have sex. Kyle makes a deal with Peggy and Hilda to support female leadership so they don't call a vote of the moral board about him and Jennifer. Kyle has sex with Tracy.

-The Eagles do a huge supply run and bring back water, fuel, food, and a load of dogs they rescued. Samantha destroys Jeremy's jeep when he handcuffs her to the steering wheel to keep her out

of the fight when they rescue the kids Badger's group was selling. Nature sends bats to attack, taking another cut from Adrian's small herd.

### **June 10<sup>th</sup>**

-Near Cleveland, Oklahoma. Camp meeting where they pick 15 as the age line and see how few females they have that are capable of having children. Adrian is now 2 weeks from the end of his leadership.

### **June 15<sup>th</sup>**

-Outside Bixby, Oklahoma. A huge fire flushes Safe Haven back onto the road. They take shelter in a creek. Kendle and Luke's plane crash-lands. The island woman made it home. Kyle and Seth are given a loving correction for crossing the line with Jennifer and Becky. Samantha goes with the hunting team and helps save Neil when he is attacked by something in the water. Kevin tells Cynthia about his feelings for her.

### **June 19<sup>th</sup>**

-10 miles south of Muskogee, Oklahoma. Angela is using her gifts openly now and directing her female rookies. A traveling store comes by the camp. Angela holds tryouts for her team XO. Tonya did better than most of the women who showed up. Kenn takes the rookie females on their first hunting run for rabbits. Swamp bunnies. Lol.

### **June 22<sup>nd</sup>**

-Arkansas state line. Angela finds out about Tracy and Charlie. Angela convinces Cynthia to help Matt and put Kevin on hold. The Jr. Eagles are formed. They get an SOS call from kids who are trapped in Little Rock. Becky finds out she's pregnant and has an abortion because it might be Rick's baby.

### **June 26<sup>th</sup>**

-Angela picks Jennifer as her team XO, shocking everyone. Adrian figures out Marc is a descendant; he's been hiding it from everyone, including Angela. The team heads down to clear a path into Little Rock.

### **June 27<sup>th</sup>**

-Adrian and the Eagles make it into Little Rock and rescue Conner. Major Garret kills Conner's mother. Angie takes her first lifeforce. Back in Safe Haven, Marc unlocks his gifts to save Dog.

### **June 28<sup>th</sup>**

-Little Rock, Arkansas. Adrian is mortally wounded. He gives leadership to Angela. Angela takes over Safe Haven with the Eagles behind her. Marc and Angie have sex. Everyone thinks Adrian is going to die.

This is an old Google map I made for Safe Haven's route of travel in book three.

<https://maps.google.com/maps/ms?msid=201819586205862863011.0004da5b4fa955f9b1636&msa=0>

This is another list of places that Kenn reads off during book three. The Eagles, and some of the camp members, have been to all of these locations, searching for authority and survivors:

Nellis Air Force Base, Hawthorne Army Depot, Nellis Bombing Range, the city of Las Vegas, Santa Clara, the Dugway Proving Ground, Salt Lake City, NORAD, Grand Junction, Boulder, Ft. Collins, Denver, Lander, Casper, Ft. Supply, Ft. Bridger, Rapid City, Cheyenne. The Essex Compound, Rawlins, Glendale, Tablerock, Roanoke, the Virginia Military Institute, White Sulphur Springs, Ft. Seybert, the city of Oakland, Basset, Ft. Bliss, White Sands, F. E. Warren AFB.

# Book 4 Recap

## June 30<sup>th</sup>

-Toltec State Park Scott, AR. John tells Angela a large part of their population has cancer now. Marc talks directly with Dog for the first time, thanks to unlocking his gifts. Becky is suicidal. Adrian is on the edge of death. Angela uses magic while John uses his skills as a doctor; they save Adrian.

## July 1<sup>st</sup>

-St. Charles, Arkansas. Jennifer finds out about Kyle and Tracy. Angela uses the ant colony for the first time on rats as they travel. Tucker and Anderson are stoned to death by a cult following Safe Haven. The Stoners.

## July 4<sup>th</sup>

-North of Grenada Lake. Adrian tells Neil and Jeremy that Samantha is having an evolution. It's the first one really covered in the series. Neil and Jeremy finally agree to what Samantha wants even though neither of them want to share her. Samantha is recognized by a new refugee. The camp finds out she had a government pass. They also find out the government is coming for them. Angela is almost killed by Roger. She takes his lifeforce. Angela gets John's last wishes. They both know he's going to die soon. Marc apologizes for hiding his gifts from her.

### **July 8<sup>th</sup>**

-Jennifer is hurt by one of the other former slaves and goes into labor. Autumn's twin is sickly and has the feeling of being evil. The Eagles shoot down the plane carrying Mitch and Matt after Matt called the government and gave them information on Safe Haven and the descendants. Crone and several of the high-level Eagles reveal themselves to be traitors and blow up the medical camper, killing John, Anne, Leslie, and Jennifer's newborn son. They also try to kill Adrian.

-Marc and his team leave to go fight the soldiers. He's now The Ghost.

### **July 15<sup>th</sup>**

-Marc's group makes it to Little Rock Air Force Base. He leaves the next morning with Paul and Jax to go to Oklahoma and make contact with the Indians.

### **July 17<sup>th</sup>**

-Near Holly Springs National Forest. Angela finds little Hanali in a tree. As she falls, and Adrian catches her, she sees where the cruise ship is located. Angela is drugged and cut by Clifford and his brother as they try to kidnap her for the government. Doug and Peggy become a couple.

### **July 24<sup>th</sup>**

-Marc finds Kendle at Luke's grave. She joins his Shadow Riders. Sebastian, Cesar's brother, joins Marc's group to fight the government. They see the battalion of soldiers going down Interstate 25.

### **July 24<sup>th</sup>**

-Safe Haven is camped in Tishomingo State Park, MS. Kenn's team goes to the Mississippi Medical Center and find Linny and Tyson, who they rescue from the lab there. Kenn is turned blue by someone messing with the shower faucet.

### **July 25<sup>th</sup>**

-Double Springs, Alabama. Charlie and Adrian save Tracy when she's pulled into the creek by a snake. Jeff and Crista become a couple. Safe Haven is attacked again. Lee is killed by an imposter who looks like him enough to get the assassins by the guards. Becky kills most of them, using her magic openly for the first time.

### **August 1<sup>st</sup>**

-Colorado. Marc's group is now doing a series of hit and run attacks that are starting to lower the number of soldiers marching toward Safe Haven. He's also bonding with Kendle. He can call the wolves now.

### **August 2<sup>nd</sup>**

-Walnut Grove, Alabama. Atolius reaches Safe Haven and accidentally tells Angela about Marc and

Kendle. Adrian and Angela send out their alpha calls for more fighters.

### **August 10<sup>th</sup>**

-Route 40, East of Amarillo. Marc kills Francis and lets Ivan live. Marc and Kendle are getting closer, to the dismay of the Eagles with him. He refuses to call Angela, trying to give her a clean break in case he dies.

### **August 11<sup>th</sup>**

-Near Borden Springs, Alabama. They listen to Marc's radio calls and hear the growing desperation. The battles are getting harder. Angela saves Adrian's life when a telephone pole falls on the mess tent. Adrian finds out Conner is in love with Candy. Kenn, once again stained blue, publicly apologizes to Angela. Then Charlie and the others admit to the pranks they've been playing. Smurf balls.

### **August 17<sup>th</sup>**

-This is when Marc cheated with Kendle. I couldn't put it in there because it would have ruined the surprise later. The last battle happens at Little Rock Air Force Base. No one knows if Marc made it out alive.

### **August 25<sup>th</sup>**

-Safe Haven is camped in the Sloppy Floyd State Park, Georgia. Angie leaves with Dog to go find



Marc. She sees Kendle and uses her gifts to toss the woman aside. She and Marc are reunited. She tells him she's pregnant. She goes back to her camp, letting Marc go if that's what he wants.

### **August 26<sup>th</sup>**

-Marc returns to Safe Haven and beats Adrian's ass for the attempts to get Angela to cheat. He reveals several pregnancies, including Cynthia, Crista, and Samantha. Adrian has a heart attack. Marc sends Kendle to Adrian, hoping to occupy them both. The hated brown envelopes are passed out in preparation for the fight with the remaining soldiers who are now coming in force to wipe them out.

This is another Google map I made for Safe Haven's route of travel in book 4.

<https://maps.google.com/maps/ms?msid=201819586205862863011.0004e80303aa828bf8ef2&msa=0&ll=35.371135,-87.51709&spn=16.419512,22.939453>

# Book 5 Recap

Book five takes place in, and all around, Lookout Mountain, from September 1<sup>st</sup> to September 11<sup>th</sup>. A lot of it happened simultaneously.

## September 1<sup>st</sup>

-Jennifer and Cynthia warn Marc that Angela is planning to hand herself over to the enemy to save the camp. Kendle warns Adrian that women are going to take over the world. Cynthia's baby hurts Kip. The vet, Chris, sneaks out of camp to do his part in the coming battle.

## September 2<sup>nd</sup>

-Donner arrives at the destroyed base and takes over leadership of the soldiers. Vario and his group join Safe Haven. Angela promises Kendle she'll either help her or kill her. Marc takes Kenn and Adrian out of camp for their run and starts revealing Adrian's secrets to Kenn. Women and kids are sent out as spies and assassins. Jennifer is caught by soldiers in Donner's camp, intentionally.

## September 3<sup>rd</sup>

-Angela and Donner speak for the first time when he threatens the hostages if she doesn't surrender. They negotiate terms. The teams find out Adrian is really a traitor who was gathering them up to hand

them over to the government. Marc takes Adrian captive and sends him back to their base. Jennifer goes bloodthirsty on the base camp when she gets free. Donner flees. Jennifer kills every other soldier there.

### **September 4<sup>th</sup>**

-Samantha shoots Donner from her blind, keeping him on the move as he flees to another camp of soldiers. Dog sees a big white female wolf while he and the ants are attacking the base camp that Donner just fled from. Trey and David, two of Donner's top men, arrive at Safe Haven in the chopper to negotiate. Angela gets information from Trey and forces him to leave. She keeps David. Tonya surrenders to a group of soldiers to save the rest of her team and to infiltrate the enemy.

### **September 5<sup>th</sup>**

-Donner's secret assassins attack the cave where all of Safe Haven's weaker people have been stashed. Peggy triggers the explosives and buries the assassins while she and the camp members take a secret tunnel to safety. Kenn rescues Tonya, devastating the base she is being held at. It's proof to him that he loves her. Samantha is captured as part of her orders and taken to Donner.

### **September 6<sup>th</sup>**

-Tracy is taken captive by Sherman and abused. Sebastian meets Angela and can't control the

obsession that immediately starts. Angela's guards kill him and his men. The inner rings of Angela's plan are triggered and devastate the mountain in every direction.

### **September 7<sup>th</sup>**

-Jennifer arrives in time to help Marc win the battle for Safe Haven's camp members. Then she finds out her baby isn't there. Autumn was taken by Lilly, one of the former slaves who hate Jennifer. Adrian confesses his guilt over the radio for the entire world to hear. Donner arrives to claim his prize, landing the chopper in the middle of the destroyed camp. Angela threatens to detonate the Smallpox virus they found. Sherman arrives with Tracy as his captive.

-Crista shoots Sherman. Donner fires a spell at Crista and knocks her out of her blind. She falls hundreds of feet. Heartbroken, Jeff starts to detonate the Smallpox. The big bunker calls. They threaten to bomb the entire area if Angela and Adrian don't get on the chopper. Angela agrees. Donner lets Samantha go and flies off with Angela and Adrian.

-Marc finds Crista's body and realizes Angela is giving herself up. He's too late to stop it. Jennifer gets her daughter back and lets Lilly blow herself up on the landmine she stepped on.

### **September 8<sup>th</sup>**

-The Maker's Call is made by Adrian and Angela. They gain knowledge of their past lives and the damnation of humanity because of their choices. Kevin and Jeff leave Safe Haven together and head north.

-Angela locks onto the President, Benjamin, in the big bunker and forces him to shoot himself. Then she mentally captures Marcella, his lover and secretary, and sends her out on a mission to kill or enslave all soldiers. It's the start of her plan for women to rule the world.

-Marc asks Angela how he dies. She tells him he loses a fair fight to Adrian. Marc then happily shoots Adrian multiple times. A mysterious force stops Marc from finishing him off. Kendle heals Adrian as much as she can. The Yellowstone volcano blows. The tremors from it are felt all the way in Georgia. Adrian and Kendle become a couple. Dog leaves to follow the female wolf that is haunting his mind.

### **September 9<sup>th</sup>**

-Angela orders herself, Conner, and Adrian arrested. She stops Adrian and Marc from having a battle to the death. Her female team rolls through the homecoming crowd, killing bad guys and eliminating threats as she points them out.

-They hold a vote on leadership that Angela wins with 87% still wanting her to lead them. Then they have Adrian and Conner's public trial. Adrian is officially banished from Safe Haven. Conner is put on conditional banishment, meaning he can earn his way back in with good behavior. Adrian and Conner form their own camp with David and some of the other soldiers Angela refused to allow into her camp yet. Angela has become a byzan from her plan to kill the soldiers, though she hasn't told anyone yet.

### **September 11<sup>th</sup>**

-On the way to Safe Haven mountain, they pick up Tara and Missy and find out the new threat headed for them isn't soldiers. It's their own kind. The magic users are coming.

# Book 6 Recap

This book takes place in the 100 miles surrounding Pigeon Mountain, also called Safe Haven mountain, from September 11<sup>th</sup> to September 25<sup>th</sup>.

## September 11<sup>th</sup>

-Safe Haven reaches the mountain cave where they plan to build their permanent base. Marc is the unofficial XO now. The chain of command is grounded for their protection. There's an ash storm.

-Dog is on his personal journey. He has contact with the female wolf. He fights her pack and wins, but is injured when a tree branch falls on him. He gets trapped. The female leaves with her pack. Dog is found by a group of coyotes. He trades their help in exchange for the location of food. They take Dog to Sally, a veterinarian, for help with his leg. Sally is attacked by a local mother and daughter. Dog helps her kill them. Sally then drags their bodies into her barn, chops them up, and feeds them to the healing animals in the cages.

## September 12<sup>th</sup>

-Angela puts her team on the quiet goal of clearing an exit out of the mountain even though they haven't even started living in it yet. Theo's team

hears the ghost in the cave as they start getting it set up for power lines and ladders.

### **September 13<sup>th</sup>**

-Angela walks most of the cave while the Eagle teams come and go with loads of supplies from nearby areas. A storm forces people into the cave before it's ready. Jack Devine's train arrives nearby.

### **September 14<sup>th</sup>**

-Jack shows up at Safe Haven's gates, demanding the return of Missy. Darian arrives, seeking justice for his twin sister, Dari, who was killed by Angela's team because she supported slavery. Marc, Kendle, and Adrian follow Jack, leaving Adrian as an invisible spy. Adrian is immediately captured, like Angela wanted.

### **September 15<sup>th</sup>**

-Jack comes back to Safe Haven's gates and is killed by a group effort that includes his own horse. Kyle's group rescues Adrian before Vlad can kill him in revenge for Jack's death. Adrian plants explosives on the train tracks and blows up the station and the incoming train with Jack's fighters. There are only a few survivors. One of them is Jay, Jack's son.

### **September 16<sup>th</sup>**

-Kyle wrecks while on a supply run in the northern area around SHM (Safe Haven Mountain) and kills everyone but himself and Whitney. He's badly



injured. The wreck happens near the home of Sally, who still has Dog living on her property while his broken leg heals. She reluctantly helps them.

-Jennifer arrives. Sally, already crazy, starts getting worse. Dog protects Sally. Jennifer and Whitney take Kyle away as soon as he can travel. Sally releases the animals in her barn, gets her little dogs onto the ATV in her shed, and leaves. Dog goes with her because the female wolf was headed north and so is Sally.

-A tremor knocks an Eagle supply van down a cliff. They are helped by Brittani and her family. Jay, Jack's son, joins Safe Haven as a refugee.

### **September 17<sup>th</sup>**

-Brittani and her family join Safe Haven. Conner heals Samantha's cancer. David is kidnapped by a lurker. Marc, Adrian, and Billy rescue him. They find out it is really a trap team that was sent by Benjamin before he died. They save one other captive, named Chauncey.

### **September 18<sup>th</sup>**

-Safe Haven officially moves into the caves now; it's mostly ready. Angela tells her chain of command that she's not staying. She also tells Kenn to quietly get them ready for a bugout.

-Sally makes it to her cabin further north. Dog is still with her. Jeff and Kevin are already there, holed up from the storm. They are attacked by the animals outside and have to work together to survive even though Sally is very uncooperative. A huge blizzard covers their area and heads south toward Safe Haven.

### **September 19<sup>th</sup>**

-Refugees from Zone C rush the gates and get through. The Eagles kill them all. Chauncey is interrogated. They find out he is a Keeper and it's their turn to be recorded in the history of the descendants. They all find out Jennifer is an enforcer. Angela orders Darian removed because he also supports slavery, like his sister did. Adrian is supposed to do it.

-They have their first cave-in. One of Theo's legs is paralyzed. Kendle and her team leave to secure the boat they need to make it to the island. Conner is sent with them. Becky and Seth collect the iodine tablets Angela sent them out for and fight off wild dogs. Cynthia's paper comes out, stirring people up about the refugees who have now surrounded Safe Haven.

### **September 20<sup>th</sup>**

-While evaluating refugees for entry, the gates are attacked again. Adrian and Marc work together to get Angela back inside. Safe Haven stops taking in

refugees. Angela finds out Adrian didn't kill Darian. Angela holds an emergency meeting and tells the entire camp that she and the Eagles are leaving soon, heading to Pitcairn Island. Vlad takes the snow team at the top of the mountain captive and plants explosives.

### **September 21<sup>st</sup>**

-Jeff and Kevin decide to leave Sally's home ahead of the next storm. They see a mushroom cloud from a nuclear reactor meltdown. Dog sees the female he's been tracking and takes off after her. Dog kills the big brute in her pack and the others flee. Jeff and Kevin see four long passenger trains heading south toward Safe Haven. They decide to go help. Sally stays in the cabin. Dog claims his mate. Animals attack the cabin again. Jeff, Kevin, and Dog go back to help Sally. Dog and his mate are injured. They all head for Safe Haven after battling the panther.

### **September 24<sup>th</sup>**

-Angela orders the mountain sealed up. She tells Jennifer to blow the tunnel where the ants are living. It causes another small cave in. While Marc is handling that rescue, Angela is lured away by Tara and Jay. Debra takes a bullet for her. Debra is the ghost they've been hearing. Tara uses her gifts and leads Angela up the mountain, leaving Jay behind to take the fall.

-Marc finds Jay, who is under Tara's mental control, and starts torturing him. The Eagles question Missy and find out Tara isn't her mother. She's really Donner's widow.

-Tara gets Angela to the top of the mountain, where Vlad hits the button to trigger the explosives. Angela thanks him. The avalanche wipes out most of the refugees around Safe Haven and buries her camp under the snow where they're safe. Vlad punches her in the stomach.

-Adrian and Quin save Angela's life and take her down the mountain, but she loses the baby. Angela passes leadership to Marc. Marc accuses Angela of intentionally sacrificing their baby for Safe Haven. This is a moment Marc hasn't really paid for yet.

### **September 25<sup>th</sup>**

-They find out four trains of magic users are coming, the Mexican army is on the way, and the nuclear fallout from the reactor meltdown is approaching, all at the same time. Marc resigns from the Eagles, but stays with Angie. He still isn't sure if she sacrificed their baby, but he loves her too much to walk away.

# Book 7 Recap

## September 27<sup>th</sup>

-Safe Haven Mountain. Kenn realizes he's Invisible. They find out from Missy that Angela went up the mountain alone to save Marc's life. She also tells them Sonja, Tara's sister, and her fighters are coming to kill everyone. Adrian makes a campsite in one of the few tunnels that haven't been sealed yet.

-Philip, a crazy refugee, tries to take Angela's power by strangling her. The doctor saves her life. Marc offers Adrian a deal to get back in control of leadership in exchange for giving up Angela. Sonja's group calls, demanding Angela be put on trial for Tara's death. Marc negotiates a meeting. Jeff and Kevin return through Adrian's tunnel.

## September 28<sup>th</sup>

-Marc's team leaves for the meeting with Sonja. A rookie, Barry, takes a bullet meant for Marc. They drop Angela with Adrian at a small den near SHM.

-Americus, GA. Kendle's team is kidnapped and taken to Market Town. Kendle and Conner follow. We find out the UN has forces on American soil; they run Market Town through a council of slave masters. Kendle makes a deal to fight in their

matches and increase the profits of those masters, in exchange for getting her team back alive.

### **October 1<sup>st</sup>**

-Marc meets with Sonja's group in a small strip mall 30 miles from SHM. Sonja is scared of their enforcer, but not any of the others, including Marc. She says she will consume Safe Haven if she decides Angela is guilty. Sonja threatens Marc. Angela shows up and sets fire to the place in their minds, showing what she'll do. Sonja backs down. Angela has more power than she does. She agrees to leave and give up the slaves she already has. Angela offers a truce and even sends food with them.

-On the way back to Safe Haven, Marc finds out Angela lied. The food she sent with Sonja was poisoned. Almost everyone who came with Sonja dies from it. They trigger the explosives the vet planted at the train station to take out any survivor. The sole survivor, Bryson, was in love with Sonja. He buries her and plots his revenge.

### **October 3<sup>rd</sup>**

-Angela and Adrian talk about biological warfare and figure out the government released some of those during the war. The Eagles and soldiers fight in the showers. Dale is spending a lot of time with Simon. Kenn's gifts unlock. Another refugee tries to kill Marc. They register the first jump in radiation

levels outside the cave. Cynthia starts showing signs of cracking as the pregnancy progresses. Candy is missing Conner and hiding it.

### **October 7<sup>th</sup>**

-Kendle wins her matches in Market Town and becomes known as The Black Widow. She kills the main slave master, then finds out she was betrayed by Yuri, her benefactor. She meets Dirce, the leader of the UN forces controlling Market Town and the surrounding area.

### **October 10<sup>th</sup>**

-Angela wakes and tells Adrian she has to go back to Safe Haven. He calls Marc, who comes down to escort them. As they meet at the bottom of the mountain, Julia and Cody join them. Marc finds out Cody, who is almost feral, is his son. The Mexican army calls. Angela tells them to kiss her American ass. It guarantees they'll settle in and stay. Adrian goes back to his campsite in the tunnel. David joins him. Marc gives Tonya free run of their little lab when Doc Savage refuses to make the hemp tea like John had been doing for their cancer patients.

### **October 11<sup>th</sup>**

-Marc and the Eagles leave the mountain on a last supply run while escorting Jeff and Kevin to the warehouse where Sally is waiting with Dog and his mate. Marc and Dog say goodbye. Adrian gives Sally a message for his daughter, Alexa. Marc

leaves Adrian behind, still trying to get the man out of their lives. David picks him up. They all run for home with the supplies.

-The Mexican army has reached this side of the mountain. They see Marc's group. The Eagles make it into the mountain and then blow up that tunnel entrance. A group of the kids run away because they're scared of the Mexicans, of Mikel, who is Cesar's cousin. Becky also runs because she is going crazy in the mountain. Hearing the Mexicans flipped her hard. Adrian convinces David to go help his daughter. The Eagles find the kids. Becky makes it out of the mountain as that entrance is blown up. Seth goes with her.

-A group of Mexican soldiers come through the tunnel where Adrian is camped. Adrian and David make it to the next floor while Marc throws down vials that knock the soldiers out so he can use them as a bargaining chip with Mikel. The vet drops food down the hole that is poisoned, on Angela's orders. Kyle asks Jennifer to marry him. Cynthia tells Kevin she's in danger. He tells her he's leaving again. Marc starts to bond with Cody. Everyone finds out Angela and Tracy are suicidal.

### **October 12<sup>th</sup>**

-Jeff and Kevin leave again. Cynthia's mind snaps a little more. She shuts Daryl out even though they're dating. Ray finds Dale being hugged by Simon.



Dale admits he wants both men. The radiation levels start going up steadily outside the mountain.

### **October 13<sup>th</sup>**

-Cynthia's latest newspaper comes out, full of insanity and accusations about the descendants. She wants a vote on normals being in charge. A refugee tries to assassinate Marc. Adrian and Marc talk about the Maker's Call and realize it means their society can't have any killers in it when they try to make contact again.

-Adrian forces Angela to get out of the medical bay. He takes her to the shower where she's used as bait to reveal another group of assassins. She does a workout with Tracy where she tells the woman she has a favor when she needs it. The doctor refuses to handle any descendant kids now because little Autumn talked to him and freaked him out. Candy is showing signs of the mountain sickness. She misses Conner badly. Hilda and Peggy try to get Tonya, and then Jennifer, to lead them on females ruling the world. They both refuse the job.

-Cody goes to find Angela because he feels her sadness. She tells him she'll be his mom now. Cynthia breaks up with Daryl. Samantha is told to stop watching the monitors now that the people outside are starting to get sick and die. Leeann says goodbye to Billy and puts a charm on him so he can't forget her. Ray catches Dale cheating on him.

Charlie and Tracy start a paintball fight, with Adrian as the main target.

### **October 14<sup>th</sup>**

The earthquake rips Safe Haven apart. Jeremy is killed. The vet kills several lurkers. He also kills Simon, causing Dale to flip out and blame Ray. The floor of the mess falls, killing fifty valued men, women, and children. Billy is knocked out by falling debris. There's a fire in the mess that kills dozens more from the smoke. The quake causes another avalanche that buries most of the Mexican army. Mikel survives.

### **October 15<sup>th</sup>**

Kendle is declared the official winner of the Market Town matches. She agrees to take her men and leave. She does, also taking the descendant babies given to her by one of the residents of the town so they won't be killed. Then she comes back and slaughters Yuri. Dirce chases her. He attacks during a snow storm and is shot, allowing the team to get away, but Dirce knows where they're going. Kendle and Tommy have sex. Kendle's group is attacked while trying to gather fuel. Two of her team are killed. They head for home.

### **October 22<sup>nd</sup>**

Kendle's group reaches SHM and is stunned by the devastation. There are no signs that anyone inside survived. The UN forces rumble into the valley.

Dirce threatens to blow up the mountain with his tanks if Angela doesn't surrender. She doesn't answer. He fires, blowing a hole in the side of the mountain. Kendle's team has contact with Safe Haven. They are told to get ready for all hell to break loose.

# Book 8 Recap

Book eight begins back on the night of the earthquake.

## **October 14<sup>th</sup>**

-There's a huge fire in the mess. Almost everyone who can heads for it while searching for extinguishers. Kenn gets Angela and Cody out of the cubby where they are trapped. Julia's body is found. Marc is found. He is unconscious. The floor under Samantha collapses. She is impaled by plastic shards. Neil cauterizes the wound and brings her to the bottom level. Angela and Adrian get to the top floor and open the vent to clear the smoke.

-Shane was taken by the ants while he was knocked out. Billy wakes up and can't remember any of them. The magic freaks him out. Marc wakes up. Charlie and his group find an open tunnel where Mexican soldiers are coming in. Charlie has his first life-or-death fight. They find Shane and give him mercy. An assassin tries to kill Angela. The vet kills him while Angela takes his lifeforce. The vet kills another assassin as she talks to Angela. Marc kills an assassin who tries to hold him hostage. Dale attacks Ray, blaming him for the vet killing Simon.

-Mandy goes into labor and has a daughter. They find Chauncey's body. Cody tells them the Onion man is coming. They figure out it's the UN man. He'll be there in eight days. Missy collapses from smoke inhalation. Angela helps her. Samantha stops breathing. Neil does CPR. Angela and Cody save her. Angela finds out Marc's new gift can identify descendant powers on sight. She tells him to keep that quiet so he isn't hunted for it. Two assassins try to shoot Marc. Chris kills them both. Outside, Mikel starts climbing the mountain, looking for a way in.

### **October 15<sup>th</sup>**

-They get the power on in some places. Angela has a dream where she speaks to the Creator and begs him to help her people. He refuses. Zack and his group are trapped in a tunnel that is open and the soldiers are making their way up the mountain to it. The Eagles find the heavy equipment and start digging their way to Zack. Camp members panic and start fighting. They want out. The Eagles start clearing bodies and pulling meat from their dead animals to get everyone fed. Gus tells Brittani he's joining the Eagles. She forbids it. Marc's team rescues Zack and his group while killing yet another assassin among them. Doug comes out of the body pit and is almost shot because he looks like a zombie.

-One of the nuns try to kill Tonya to get rid of her baby, thinking it's evil. They hold a camp meeting.

Neil says he and Samantha are not going to the island with them. They get a radio call from Kendle and then from Kevin. They don't answer anyone. Jennifer is taken captive by a camp member who wants out of the mountain right then. Kyle shoots her in the shoulder to save her life. The doctor decides to stay in the mountain.

### **October 16<sup>th</sup>**

-Angela tells Marc if he breaks the deal they made about Adrian, they're through. Angela separates the camp, with people who are staying on the bottom floors and people who are leaving on the top floors. Dale has to be sedated again to stop him from screaming. Marc tells the vet to stay away from Angela. Simon (not Dale's lover) was chosen to be the leader of those who are staying. Marc forbids Angela from going topside to help with the water collection. Kyle holes up in a cubby with Jennifer and the baby after she's almost kidnapped again. He's terrified that Angela has decided to remove them. Angela convinces him that isn't the case.

-They go out to clear the water collection setup that was blocked during the earthquake. Angela and Charlie go out dressed like Eagles. Mikel's men ambush the workers. Mikel uses that distraction to head inside the cave. Billy holds a gun on Marc and runs off to answer that mysterious voice in his mind. Tracy shoots Mikel as he enters the cave. Angela goes back in to handle a magic battle between the

kids. She tells the kids they now have to have a meeting with her every night. The doctor saves Samantha from being taken captive by Simon, the new leader of the people who are staying. They want a magic user of their own.

-Leeann finds out Billy left. They have the meeting with the kids where Angela makes them see they're being mean to the normals. She orders them to spend time together now. She gives them descendant rules for the first time. She also gives the kids a job during the coming fight with the UN. Brittani starts helping with the meals because there's no one else to do it. Marc keeps using his alpha gift on Adrian, trying to turn the man into one of his men. Ray tries to talk to Dale. He starts screaming again.

### **October 17<sup>th</sup>**

-Cody is taken by Logan, who has the mountain sickness, or so everyone is told. He demands to become a descendant. Kenn snaps Logan's neck while Marc grabs Cody. Cynthia is still alive and pregnant, convincing her that Angela isn't trying to kill her. Samantha and Neil decide to go with Angela to the island. Greg asks Angela to clear him because he was accused of being the one who kidnapped Cody. She finds out Greg is in love with her. The doctor challenges Simon for leadership of the normals. Angela says they'll hold a vote. They find out Simon has a list of females he's planning to

hold captive. Simon is put under guard. It's around this time that Kenn cheats on Tonya.

-Samantha breaks her stitches open. Adrian gets her and Jennifer moved to the top level where they're safer. Samantha hears a survivor screaming mentally for help. They dig him out. It's David. Neil finds out it was supposed to be Samantha instead of Jeremy, but Angela interfered with that destiny. Kenn tells Tonya to move to the top floor. The doctor wins the vote. The Runaways haven't picked a leader yet. Tonya refuses to let Kenn lock up his gifts. The same nun tries to kill Tonya again. Almost everyone splits into three groups now: The Islanders, the Runaways, and the Mountaineers. Charlie and Adrian learn they can team up mentally with people they don't like. Marc and Adrian are being teamed for the fight with the UN. They're told now so they have time to adjust to it.

### **October 18<sup>th</sup>**

-Angela has a command meeting and gets her people working on plans for the bugout and the UN fight. Dylan is chosen to lead the Runaways. Dylan is arrested for planning kidnappings, theft, and more crimes. Marc makes the other groups hand over their weapons. Jennifer meets with some of the people from the other groups, telling them their future. It gets a few of them to join the Islanders. Doug tells Jennifer he's leaving to go find Becky. Charlie and Tracy have sex for the first time. Ivan



starts doing duty over Angela. Candy talks about missing Conner. The Eagles think she has the mountain sickness.

-Cynthia is taken captive by the escaped prisoners. She is rescued by the Eagles and moves to the top level, now convinced that she was wrong about Angela. Kenn figures out Charlie is no longer a virgin. Charlie says he and Tracy are engaged, assuming so because they had sex.

-One of the Runaways tries to kidnap Missy to lead her out of the mountain. Shawn kills the woman. The kids all sit up at the same time and start warning them that the UN man has arrived. Kenn has his first vision. Angela tells them to start digging the escape tunnel.

-20 miles from the mountain, Jeff and Kevin find Billy and take shelter in the same house until morning. When they wake up, Billy is gone, headed west. Jeff and Kevin have dropped Sally off. They hear the UN on the radio and go back to help Safe Haven. Billy keeps moving west and starts eliminating bad guys on his way.

### **October 25<sup>th</sup>**

-The Islanders change locations to a tunnel the other groups don't know about. Jeff and Kevin arrive and see the threat as the UN forces rumble into the valley. Dirce threatens to blow up the mountain with

his tanks if Angela doesn't surrender. A group of Runaways flee out of the exit that's just been cleared. Refugees outside flood it, trying to get in. Dirce fires and kills most of them, while unknowingly sealing the hole. Kendle's team is told to get ready for all hell to break loose. Refugees around the mountain flood toward the location and attack anything moving, including the UN and the few Runaways who weren't killed. Dirce gives Angela 10 minutes to surrender. She tells Jeff to take the shot.

-Jeff shoots Dirce, wounding him. Kevin and Jeff slide down the mountain as a tank fires on them. The kids bring up a shield together and hold it as the tank fires again, saving everyone. Magic users start attacking the UN men as the den mothers get the kids away from the fight. Jennifer and Angela target Dirce together. Jeff fires again and kills Dirce this time. Marc blows up the tank. Angela triggers another avalanche, burying most of the UN men. Refugee camps at the top of the mountain are swept away.

-Angela sends the Eagles out, declaring no survivors are allowed. Marc and Adrian walk the battlefield using magic and guns. Marc uses his new sonic gift for the first time. Samantha causes mini sinkholes and Cynthia uses her baby's ice gift to freeze those holes shut. Conner's gifts are revealed when he takes mental control over hundreds of the

UN troops and makes them kill themselves. Angela and Samantha use magic to collapse parts of the cliffs around the valley to prevent escapes.

-Conner knocks huge boulders down the mountain to seal the gaps. Snipers and Eagles on the ground roll in to finish off any survivors. Angela sends out camp members to collect vehicles and fuel for the bugout. She starts taking lifeforces. All around her, her army does the same, giving all of them big evolutions in power.

-Kendle's group rappels down the cliff. Kendle gives the twins she rescued to Angela, understanding that was really her mission all along. Kendle uses her gifts in front of everyone for the first time, now clearing the road for Safe Haven to leave. Kendle asks Marc to let Conner back into their camp. She and Tommy are now a couple. The doctor tries to keep them out of the cave, but he's scared to fight. Angela takes back over the mountain.

-Kevin tries to reconcile with Cynthia. It doesn't go well. Kendle officially breaks up with Adrian so she can be with Tommy. All the Runaways are gone now. Candy and Conner have a good moment where she welcomes him home. Adrian saves Marc's life from a refugee bullet. Now clearing the entire cave, Kenn and Tonya find three little kids. Kenn takes them to Angela and demands to keep them. David

leaves the mountain and heads for a nearby town to complete a mission. Natoli and most of his men head for Indian lands now that the big fight is over.

-Ray tries to talk to Dale again. The vet sees it. We find out the vet wants Ray. Daryl and Cynthia make peace. Cynthia mentally challenges fate and says Angela won't let her die. Jeff joins Doug's group. Kevin decides to stay. Nancy tells Adrian she wants his baby.

-Doug's group leaves, headed west to find Becky and Seth. A single man on the mountain watches and waits. Angela says she'll lift Conner's banishment. Candy asks Adrian if Conner put a spell on her. Jennifer has a vision of the future that wakes her up screaming. She warns the doctor and his group, but they refuse to believe her about what's coming for them. Charlie demands that Angela recognize him and Tracy as an official couple or they'll stay here.

### **October 26th**

-Safe Haven bugs out. One of the mountain group tries to stab Neil. Everyone flees the mountain as an enormous wave of refugees floods into the valley. Cynthia is one of the last ones out. As she exits, a chunk of ice breaks off and hits her, killing her.

-The Messenger makes contact for the first time. Marc yells at him on behalf of everyone. As the convoy flees, the ledge breaks under Marc and

Angela's truck. They are swarmed with refugees and then saved by Kenn, Kyle, and Jennifer. Bryson, still holed up on a cliff ledge, shoots Kenn and Kyle, but misses Marc and Angela.

-Ivan goes back to help them all with his tank. He gets them out alive. Angela tells Marc and Adrian to stay behind and wait for Bryson. Bryson contacts Erik, one of Adrian's old teammates, and tells him he failed. Erik tells Bryson to chase them. Erik's fighters are from Pennsylvania, from Sonja's town. They plan the next attack. We see Brian, Adrian's grandson, with them. Erik's wife and slave, Michelle, is kidnapped by the vet, on Angela's orders.

-Jennifer and Autumn heal Kyle. As they travel, the doctor calls on the radio, begging them to come back because refugees have breached the door. Crying, Angela refuses. Safe Haven keeps going. Ray gets out and heads back to the mountain for Dale.

-Adrian kills Bryson. Erik's team springs his trap and captures Marc and Adrian. Marc kills a few of them and the others flee, setting up Marc's trap for Erik and the rest of his crew. The vet picks them up. They see Michelle bound in the rear of the vehicle. They make calls that tell everyone they're going to Market Town.

-Safe Haven heads away from Market Town. They camp overnight and dig up supplies that were buried for this moment before they went into the mountain. They have the nightly meeting with the kids. The Eagles have a quiet celebration party after the camp is asleep. Kendle admits that she's still a threat to Angela.

### **October 27<sup>th</sup>**

-The Market Town mission team gets ready to roll. A wounded survivor from the mountain finds them. It's one of the medics. He dies in front of them. The mission team sneaks out of the convoy. The vet picks them up in his RV. Michelle is gone, killed in revenge for everything Vlad took from Angela. Morgan reveals that he's a descendant. Erik and his team destroy Market Town, thinking Angela is there. It uses up most of their energy. Angela's team arrive, using guns and magic. Erik and his crew are all killed. At the end of the battle, Samantha executes the vet. Chris was removed by the last person he suspected would do it.

-On the way home, Angela forces Adrian to tell the story of how he lost his old team and what he did to get even. Angela calls a camp vote on Adrian. His banishment is not lifted. He's told to leave. Marc joins the Eagles and Adrian in the RV for a private support poker party. Marc reveals that Angela knows Adrian's secret. Adrian used his gifts on her. That's why they're bonded so hard. Adrian admits

the spell backfired and caught him in it too. Marc and Adrain fight again.

### **October 29<sup>th</sup>**

-In Arkansas, Billy sees Seth and Becky as they drive by him. Becky is tracking a group of kids who have been taken by the UN in the west. Doug's group is catching up fast as Jeff also tracks those desperate kids. David makes contact with the family he's supposed to protect. Dog finds Ray and keeps him safe. He reaches out to Angela for a ride. As Marc and Adrian keep beating things out, a small crew is sent to them for the next run. They're ordered to roll out right then and pick up Dog. Kendle is driving.

# Book 9 Recap

## November 1<sup>st</sup>

-Near Rome, GA. Safe Haven makes camp in a small town as a huge storm comes through. The kids warn Angela that Nature knows she's out of the mountain. Some of the people who came with them from the mountain are from the Runaway group. They start plotting to kidnap a magic user. Angela finds out Brandon is a Mitchel. Angela confronts Theo about removing Candy from his team because she wouldn't date him.

-Angela holds a team meeting with new rules. The women, with a couple of exceptions, are not allowed to leave camp until they reach the ocean. Magic use is forbidden. Eagles can't date each other. She hands out the new team lists. The Eagles grill Ivan. He tells them Marc gave him the duty over Angela because the others aren't military. They can't keep her alive. The Runaway group attacks, steals supplies, and flees. They decided not to kidnap a child. Angela lets them go. Those supplies were poisoned.

## November 3<sup>rd</sup>

-Marc and his team reach Souther Field where the rest of the eastern UN troops are based. They pick Angela's plan to take Adrian in to sell him. Kobi,



the UN boss there, lets them in because he recognizes Kendle and wants to get it all on camera. He's been sending movies back to his boss. They find out Adrian's grandson, Brian, has been captured and is here, about to be killed. That triggers a battle where the team is knocked out and loaded onto a plane to be sent to the big UN bunker, along with a massive amount of supplies these troops have gathered while on US soil.

-As they pass out, Marc mentally captures one of Kobi's guards, who wakes them up and clears the other guards from the plane. They find the location of the International Detention Center, where many of their kind have been taken. Marc has Kendle fly the plane straight into Kobi's den, killing many of the UN men. They take four trucks of supplies, rescue Brian, and leave Kobi with his remaining troops. As they go, Marc calls on the radio and tells everyone Safe Haven is here so the refugees will overrun this location. Then they head for SHM to pick up Dog, who is near there with Ray. Brian and Adrian argue because Adrian won't leave and go with him to rescue Alexa, Brian's mother and Adrian's only daughter. Brian goes off on his own in the RV.

### **November 5<sup>th</sup>**

Marc's team reaches Ellijay, GA and finds Ray with Dog. They all take shelter in a warehouse to wait for daylight. Ray tells them Dale is dead. They wake up

as more refugees find them. They roll out and are chased. They remove some of the threats, but their location is called in. Thousands of refugees hurry that way. During this run, Kevin has gotten on everyone's nerves. He is not fitting back in at all.

### **November 6<sup>th</sup>**

-Marc drives them for 15 hours and stops to sleep in the trucks. Once again they wake up to being attacked by refugees. They flee again, rolling for the next eight hours while Safe Haven keeps heading toward the shore and listening to the radio for news. Animals heading north run across the road. Marc hits one of them. The bears are huge. It wrecks the truck. Marc is injured. They try to gather the supplies from his wrecked truck, only getting some of it before the refugees catch up to them. Marc uses all of his energy to eliminate the people following them and then passes out. They're near Atlanta now.

-In Safe Haven, Angela calls a bugout from their overnight camp site because a tracker is hunting her. Angela and the Eagles stay there, creating a chokepoint for the refugees chasing them. They kill them all. Angela is trimmed when the tracker arrives. Marc's group catches up while Neil is stitching up her leg. Marc makes Adrian stay in the truck as they roll hard to catch up to the main camp. He tells Adrian he's on protection detail for now. Marc admits to himself that if Adrian was gone, he might get too bored to stay in Safe Haven.

### **November 7th**

Safe Haven camps in a nature preserve near Flat Rock Park Springs in Columbus, GA. Supply teams are sent out. Angela sends Adrian to Montgomery to pick up a captain for their ship. Kyle's water team kills slavers at the springs and then has to find enough trucks to hold what they need. Kendle rescues a toddler here.

-Dog tells Angela that Jack Devine's horse is following them. She gives it food. There's no word from the supply team. Everyone is worried.

### **November 10<sup>th</sup>**

-The supply team has been gone 3 days. Jennifer is more than upset. They finally return with full loads of water and fuel, and tell Angela they found a train they think has food in it. Jennifer goes to Adrian to deliver a message. She agrees to send Adrian updates as long as he stays away from Angela. Marc confronts Brandon and punches him. Angela and Adrian close the mental doors between them, starting the official separation.

### **November 11<sup>th</sup>**

-During morning mess, Tonya starts to fall and Kenn saves her using magic to keep her from losing the baby. Ivan realizes Angela is training him for leadership. Kenn proposes to Tonya even though he doesn't really want to. Charlie proposes to Tracy

and she says no. They start hearing Caleb, a sick kid in Franklin, calling for help. Jennifer is put on point during the nights. They start clearing the train cars while Angela and her team leaves to go help little Caleb. They find the location of a bunker for wealthy people. The camp finds out Angela left and gets upset.

-Angela's group arrives in Franklin. The mayor gives her permission to stay. Everyone there is scared of magic and very ill. The mayor's second in command doesn't want them there at all. Angela starts on the blood tests and sends her men to go find Caleb. She realizes she has the illness already. It spreads very fast. Caleb is brought to Angela. He's too sick to be saved with anything but magic. A few hours later the mayor dies and his XO heads for Angela to throw them out. She uses magic to save Caleb. The locals attack and Angela burns them all alive, decimating the entire town. Angela calls Adrian for help. Her magic use draws trackers.

-In Safe Haven, Samantha convinces Marc he can't go help Angela. He has to keep the camp together. Adrian arrives, drops off their ship captain, collects the medication Angela needs, and goes to help her. Camp people tell Marc if Angela isn't back with them in one more day they're going to rescue her without him.

-Adrian collects Angela and her team. They are all deathly ill. He gets them under a veterinarian's office 20 miles north of Franklin and gives them the meds. Adrian kills a tracker who finds them before the man can reveal their location. Adrian passes out, now sick as well.

### **November 12th**

-An ash storm covers Safe Haven. The camp kids and some of the Eagles rebel against Marc and force him to take them to rescue Angela. Refugees and trackers are all over the small town where Angela and her team are hiding. A tracker pinpoints her location and calls in more refugees to trap her. Safe Haven rolls by and kills the tracker. They drive right into the town and rescue Angela. The descendants unleash their magic and kill most of those refugees.

-Safe Haven heads toward the ocean while hoping Angela will survive. They figure out Angela charmed Marc when they were kids. That's why Adrian's spell backfired. You can't charm someone who is already under a charm. Test results come in; the ash storm was full of fallout. If they hadn't left, they would be dead now. Marc and Adrian come up with a plan to break the bonds that are binding Adrian and Angela together.

-Adrian leaves again. The Eagles warn Marc one last time about his jealousy. Candy starts spending time with Conner. Kevin gets drunk and starts

disturbing the camp. The Eagles knock him out. Morgan punches Brandon. Brittani keeps pushing Gus to quit the Eagles.

### **November 15<sup>th</sup>**

-Angela sets a three week deadline for leaving on the boat. She tells Kevin to get on an Eagle team or leave. Angela gives Nancy permission to get pregnant by Adrian. They travel all day and camp at a mall near Marion, GA. A team is sent to the richie bunker to clean it out and offer shelter to anyone they find there. Angela sends Zack and a crew to the shore to find and secure their boat. Charlie and Tracy make peace. Charlie starts working harder to be an Eagle.

-At the richie bunker, Neil's team finds a cat that's been living off of mice. They take it back along with the supplies. Angela is now spending a lot of time with the kids to smother her pain at being away from Adrian. While they're shopping in the mall for Christmas presents, a family of refugees come in and are put into the QZ. Marc has a lesson with the kids about doing duty even when it's hard. Then he takes them to the toy store.

-The storm reaches them. Samantha tells them to take shelter. She goes into labor and they rush her to Conner, who saves her with a lifeforce. Brandon's magic is also revealed here. Candy helps Conner recover. Angela rescues Tracy from a refugee who

came in with the last family, but not before he gets a call out. Refugees once again head their way. A tornado hits the mall. A predator comes through the window of the toy store to grab a kid, any kid. Marc kills him. Safe Haven flees in the dark in the middle of the storm.

### **November 16<sup>th</sup>**

-They reach the Naval Air Station Meridian, MS and start prepping it for a last stand. Two trackers from Benjamin's bunker arrive. Marc and his team kill them as the first flood of refugees arrive. Massive fight here where most of the Eagles consume lifeforces and gain huge leaps in power.

-A new group arrives and starts clearing the refugees from the outside. It's Grant and the woman from Ciemus. Safe Haven comes out to talk. Adrian arrives with a truck of explosives he threatens to detonate to save the camp. Furious that Adrian came back, Marc challenges Angela. The Eagles remove him from leadership. They call a vote on Adrian's banishment to be held that night.

-Safe Haven reaches Ciemus, MS, 100 miles southeast of the air station. The mayor, Donna, welcomes them. She tells Angela she needs something from them, that they'll discuss it later. They settle into a hotel that has power and water, eager for the 2-day break. They have the camp meeting and vote on Adrian. He loses and is still

banished. Angela sends him to the shore to help secure the boat. Ivan bonds with Dog. They have a shift together where Dog is Ivan's trainer.

### **November 17<sup>th</sup>**

-Zack's team hasn't been heard from. Safe Haven has breakfast with Donna and her people. Angela meets William. There's an immediate spark that makes Marc and Adrian very jealous. Angela spends alone time with William. He's a byzan like her. He gives her a copy of his book on the history of the descendants. Donna asks if some of her people can go with them. She also wants Safe Haven's men to breed with her women. Angela agrees to both. Angela says they'll stay an extra day.

-Angela calls an emergency camp meeting about staying with Ciemus. Jennifer interrogates William. The camp refuses to vote on staying here. They go where she goes. Kendle challenges Angela about setting it all up. She gets Angela to admit she dream walks. Marc hits Kendle with his sonic blast and then acts like Ethan to scare her so she'll stop planning Angela's death. Grant tells Donna he's leaving. William shows signs of being unstable.

### **November 18<sup>th</sup>**

-Safe Haven starts doing medical checks and evaluations on the people who want to go with them to the island. Gus tells Brittani she's scared of being an Eagle, that's why she's pushing him to quit. She



wants to be one too. Dog tells Brittani that Angela wants her to lead her own team. Grant flirts with Jennifer to play a joke on Kyle. Adrian leaves to go find the ship and help Zack.

-There's a breach in the wall. While Angela and William's group are clearing the town, Donna and Jennifer are kidnapped by someone Ciemus had banished. A group of locals rescues them both. The kidnapper shoots Grant and is killed by Neil. Jennifer saves Grant's life. Someone takes a lifeforce at the hotel. It was Samantha's unborn twins. They drained one of the attackers. William offers to escort Safe Haven to the boat. William and Marc talk. William knows Marc slept with Kendle. He gets Marc to admit that he doesn't want Angela in leadership at all. He wants it to be a man. Morgan and Pam have a spark.

### **November 19<sup>th</sup>**

-Kevin decides to stay in Ciemus. Ray and Grant meet. Safe Haven says goodbye to Ciemus and the people who are staying. We find out Brandon wants Leeann and doesn't trust himself not to steal Billy's future wife, so he's staying. Many people think he wants Jennifer. He doesn't. William declares his interest in Angela. He tells her about the water being special. It helps her figure out how to handle the ocean. Nature sends a tree flying over the wall. Brittani saves Marc and Angela. Brittani asks to be

an Eagle. Dog tells them his mate just gave birth.  
He's a father now.

# Book 10 Recap

## November 19<sup>th</sup>

-Ciemus goes on lockdown. The special waters cover the town and clear Brandon. Kevin is found unworthy and shot by Donna.

-Becky and Seth are spying on the Western UN Encampment in Arizona. The captive kids there make plans to get free.

-During a bathroom break after they leave Ciemus, Marc asks Angela to make him a byzan, like her. When she finally agrees, the convoy is hit by bad weather. She challenges The Messenger for Marc's life and for all of humanity. The Messenger demands that she fight for the light. She refuses. They roll by a family with a sick child. Kendle refuses to listen when she's told not to help them. Jennifer locks Kendle's gifts. Ray throws a medical kit out the window for the family.

-In the west, Becky and Seth go back to their den to make a plan to rescue the kids from the UN. Jeff and Doug are there. They all work together to remove a pair of hunters that come from the UN camp. They all see that Becky is unstable, worse than before. Finding out her mother died in the earthquake makes it worse. She's also pregnant. A knock at the

door reveals another tracker from the UN camp, a group of his men, and Seth's missing daughter. The Eagles surrender and get loaded into jeeps to be taken to the UN camp. On the way, they attack the UN men and kill them all.

-At the same time, Angela unlocks the full gifts of the child alpha in the UN camp, Kimmie. Kimmie and the other kids slaughter most of the troops and join Doug's group. Kimmie and Jeff are kindred souls. Allan pulls up in a bus and they all head for Safe Haven. Allan is shot and killed by one of the few UN survivors as they leave. The leader of the UN men, Mario, escapes. Kimmie tells Jeff the kids are a trap. They all have the rage illness.

-At the shore near Ocean Springs, Adrian rescues some of Zack's team, but he can't get them out of there. Trackers surround the location and hold them there while Adrian tries to keep them alive.

-While driving, Brittani and Daryl realize they are soul mates and refuse to give in because she's with Gus. William tells Neil that descendants only carry their young for seven months, not nine. Angela tells her top people they've been promoted to full leadership spots. She won't be looking over their shoulders anymore on every choice.

**November 20<sup>th</sup>**

-Angela agrees to train all of the descendants. Wild dogs attack while they're stopped for a break. Kendle dreams of the island. Jennifer catches it. Kendle didn't tell them the people on the island are sick. Angela tells Marc she's still in danger. Samantha goes into labor again, but she's now immune to Conner's magic. William has to help her. Conner bargains for Adrian to go with them to the island.

-In the west, Doug's group is now being followed by refugees. They're expecting the kids to fight. Jeff sets up the matches and makes plans to kill as many of them as he can.

-Safe Haven reaches Ocean Springs, MS, and fights Dolly Donner and her trackers. They rescue Adrian's group and bring Zack and his wounded team back to camp. In the chaos, Kendle tries to shoot Angela. Marc saves her. Gus feels Brittani getting closer to Daryl. Angela enters the water and makes a deal with the Ocean King to give him her energy when she dies. In exchange, he'll protect their ship on the trip to the island, but only on a direct path. Gus affects the camp shield, telling them he's supposed to be in leadership.

-Angela holds the first magic lesson. Brittani breaks up with Gus and becomes a couple with Daryl. William becomes obsessed with Angela. Trinity

snares Gus. They become a couple. Nancy finds out Adrian left.

-In the west, they are getting ready for the matches. Kimmie tells Jeff he is the only descendant who is immune to Angela's call and she doesn't know why. They set up camp, eat, poison some of the food to get the thieves, and then they start betting and fighting. Becky slips off during and is followed by a lurker. She takes him captive mentally and makes him help her take gas canisters back to the fighting area. The warehouse starts filling with gas. Kimmie takes lifeforces during her fight and uses the energy to put most of the crowd to sleep. They kill those who don't fall out and blow up the building. Then they flee, heading for Safe Haven again.

### **November 21st**

-Another assassin in Safe Haven, Keith, makes plans to kill Angela. Two other assassins are revealed and removed. Jennifer is given the XO slot on Neil's team. Angela warns Neil that Becky is coming back. Angela tells Ivan he's third in her line, after Marc and Adrian. The scavenging teams are sent out. Nancy leaves to go to Adrian. Dog starts caring for the cats. Kendle tries to join Adrian in his camp a few miles from Safe Haven. He angers her and she storms off.

-Kyle's team finds Panaji, who leads them to a warehouse of freeze-dried food. Refugees see them

and call for backup on the radio. They also hear radio calls about refugees following Doug's group from the west. Ian is Angela's right hand for loading the ship. He gossips about everything he hears.

-Nancy joins Adrian and asks for a baby. Adrian uses a spell and makes love to her. Angela feels it and is furious. Marc keeps stirring her up about it. Ivan tells her he wants to be a father. She matches him with Jayda and unlocks his gifts.

-Keith tries to kill Angela while the Eagles are busy with the alligators on the beach. Candy offers Conner a private moment.

### **November 23<sup>rd</sup>**

-Angela gives Tonya a test of trustworthiness. Tracy is getting cold feet about being with Charlie. Charlie tells her he got her pregnant on purpose. Jennifer tells Tracy they need to get married or she'll be banished for breaking the age law. Ray starts developing feelings for Grant. Brittani starts taking kai lessons from Neil. Angela tells Marc they need Pitcairn Island for the silver on it.

-Tracy announces her engagement to Charlie. They have a bachelor and bachelorette party for the couples. Marc guilts Angela into accepting his marriage proposal. Kendle's pain hits the shield. Angela sends Kenn and Charlie out of camp to handle Kendle. William shows more signs of

succumbing to his obsession. Marc and Ivan fight. Conner and Candy have a private moment. They make the soulmate connection. Angela makes a deal with William to kill someone for her. Kyle gets crabs. Lol.

-Kenn and Charlie meet up, realizing they're working together to handle Kendle. They're attacked. Charlie takes his first lifeforce. Kenn and Charlie start making an uneasy peace. Charlie realizes this is his manhood test. Kenn worries he's being banished.

### **November 25<sup>th</sup>**

-Ray admits he's attracted to Grant. Tracy tells Angela she's pregnant. Angela finds out the camp has cougars. Marc realizes they've been drafted into a war for the Creator. Jennifer and Kyle get married, becoming first in the history book for the post-apocalyptic world. They make the soulmate connection. Leeann tries to run away during the wedding party. A group of rage infected kids arrive, sent by the UN. Angela refuses to let them in. She sends them away to do a job. A Ciemus man tries to kill Marc. Kyle and Jennifer consummate their marriage.

-20 miles from Safe Haven, Adrian joins Kenn and Charlie. Kenn admits he hasn't really changed, that he's been faking most of it. Charlie wakes up early



and goes outside. He is taken prisoner by a trio of trackers. Kendle finds them. Then Adrian and Kenn find them. They fight and the trackers run, being chased by Charlie. He captures them with his alpha snare. They interrogate the women. Charlie is bothered by their fear. His snare bonded him to them. He almost doesn't let Kenn and Kendle remove the women. They get a lot of information about the war and the remaining UN forces. Charlie considers staying in America.

-Kenn disciplines Charlie the old way, getting him to admit that he hates Angela being in leadership and that he charmed Tracy to keep her from leaving him for one of the older, stronger Eagles. Kenn suggests they all earn their way back into Safe Haven by killing the wave of refugees that are coming. They join Nancy for a meal and some sleep. She has a small house nearby now. She's pregnant.

-A tracker breaks in while they sleep. Kenn is stabbed. Charlie saves Kenn's life and drains himself. He withers up. Kenn gives him the life force of the tracker. Charlie develops a new respect for his mom because she's gone through it so many times. Angela connects and says to bring Charlie home.

### **November 26<sup>th</sup>**

-Tonya threatens to leave camp if Kenn isn't brought home. So does Tracy. Angela threatens Tracy but lets Tonya into their chain of command.

Gus also joins the chain of command. Marc calls a leadership vote on Adrian and Kendle going with them to keep Angela stirred up so he can break the charm on her.

-The entire camp gets to explore the ship. Angela hides weapons on the bridge. Dog and the cats are spending a lot of time together now. He gives them a tour of the ship. Angela realizes the ship is actually aware of them. They play magic dodgeball to practice their gifts and to give Marc a new level of training. Pam, Morgan, and Shawn start dating. Samantha makes the choice to come back with Angela for the final battle. Angela opens tryouts for the worst job in camp—hers. Angela gets drunk to drown her misery.

-Marc forces her out of camp for time with Adrian. Adrian pisses her off and gets her to say she hates him. The bond from the Maker's Call breaks. While they dream walk, a pair of trackers set Adrian's camper on fire. Angela is marked by the Demon of Time when he finds her hiding Adrian, who has been banished from viewing the future because he tried to change it. They see where the final battle will take place in the future and then wake up to the fire. Angela kills the trackers with her fury.

### **November 27<sup>th</sup>**

-Jeff arrives at the shore a full day early with a huge wave of refugees on his tail. Massive battle. Jeff

gets the western kids inside Safe Haven's shield. Kenn and his group pick off refugees from outside the shield. They start a fire. Nature shows up, angry about the fire. Angela tries to communicate and just pisses her off even more. Safe Haven flees onto the ship. Dog saves his cats.

-Kenn's car wrecks, trapping Charlie and the others. Refugees swarm that way. Angela begs The Messenger to save her son. He refuses unless she submits to His will. Nature attacks everyone, allowing Charlie's group to get out of the wreck and reach the shield. The rescued, infected UN kids help them win the battle. William forces Angela to pick between her men. Her fury and pain snaps the charm Adrian put on her. She's now free.

-William leaves. Jennifer becomes the official camp XO. Angela unlocks Kendle. Kendle stabs her. Then she helps Angela when the alpha bond kicks in, draining herself. They rush Angela onto the boat, but she's dying. The camp members save Angela's life.

-They see a huge ship coming toward them. The infected kids Angela turned away at the wedding party attack the UN troops on their ship. The kids slaughter them all. Cole, the captain Adrian brought back from Montgomery, confesses to being a traitor. The water starts consuming the refugees who try to follow them as the ship sets sail.

-Angela puts the rage infected kids into a deep sleep that takes away most of their memories. She lets Kimmie keep her powers. Angela reconnects Jeff to the hive and negotiates a ceasefire meeting with The Messenger. There's never been a meeting like the one they're about to have.

# Book 11 Recap

## November 27<sup>th</sup>

-The Gulf of Mexico. Angela shows more signs of mental cracks. Charlie heals Kendle's withered body, on Angela's orders. They set sail. Marc reveals his twin sister was killed by their mother. Becky tries to kill Angela. Marc tells Kendle to stay away from him. Samantha starts the garden on the ship.

-Angela and her team ascend to the higher power meeting. They find out the angels have been making bets and directing humanity through chessboards with no care for the people they're hurting. It's not Heaven. It's a Weigh Station, where souls are weighed to determine if they're good or bad. The angels are prisoners. The Messenger is the boss, but he's also trapped. They want Angela to join them to replace the women who vanished from the Weigh Station a long time ago. Angela gets them to heal the sick kids who have the rage illness. She agrees to fight for them as long as they support her after it's over, even against the Creator.

-Marc and Adrian make a new deal for Angela. Angela orders both of them moved to the ship they're towing. A storm knocks out the power. Samantha tells Angela to put Neil and Becky

together. Angela tells Samantha she won't have any more pregnancies after this one. Angela communicates with the ship. Charlie admits he put a charm on Tracy and then lifts it. Nothing happens, but this is when she really starts to change. Leeann tries to run away again. Angela forms a kill team. She says one of them won't come back from this run. Angela knows Theo isn't crippled anymore. People in the cargo bay start hearing a beeping noise.

### **November 28<sup>th</sup>**

-Charlie admits that he doesn't really want to get married yet. He says he's not going to be an Eagle anymore. Morgan starts doing medical work in the infirmary, along with Harry. Quinn starts showing signs of being flaky. Kendle is released and put to work on the cleaning crew. They get the ship moving south again. They find out Cody is already byzan. Then Marc finds out Cody has a missing twin sister who can manipulate time.

-During a lesson with the kids, it's revealed that Zack's son, Timmy, wants to be emancipated so he can date a cougar. Marc and Adrian talk about resetting time. Adrian tells Marc that Angela plans to ascend after the final battle and they'll never get her back.

### **November 29<sup>th</sup>**

-Safe Haven has their first Thanksgiving dinner a little late. Charlie officially proposes to Tracy. Angela tells Samantha something is coming for all of their kids. Tonya goes to work in the ship's lab. Tommy tries to adjust to being single again and handling his guilt over not seeing Kendle's plans to kill Angela. Gus joins the descendants on the top deck for a magic lesson instead of staying with Trinity. Katie and Lou stay at the movie, not telling on each other for being magic users who don't want to use their magic. Kenn finds out Tonya is working on a way to test for the rage illness. Angela goes into the death sleep while she has a new evolution. Candy and Conner have another private moment. Becky tells Seth they need to kill Angela to keep her from enslaving everyone.

### **November 30<sup>th</sup>**

-Ivan and Jayda start having problems. Amy, Seth's daughter, goes missing. Samantha finds the little girl in the garden and they bond right away. Dog tries to teach the cats to hunt mice. Angela sends Marc's team out early. Grant starts training Eagles to sail the ship. Cody becomes the alpha over the kids. He says Missy will be his wife when they grow up. Ian is given a job of spying and he can't tell anyone. It's a test of his inability to keep his mouth shut. Courtney is pregnant. Tonya dreams of Kronus coming down to earth.

-Angela holds a meeting where people show her what magical skills they have now. Becky is getting worse, trying to convince anyone who will listen to help her kill Angela. Seth doesn't spend any time with his daughter. Allison starts guarding the kids. They see the comet, ISON, in the sky. The top Eagles discover the employee halls. Angela and Grant get sick after eating. Daryl guards Autumn like he's been doing since she was born.

### **December 1<sup>st</sup>**

-We find out Brittani is scared of having kids. Daryl hears the beeping in the cargo bay. Tonya starts collecting blood samples from people, including Kendle.

-Eagle tryouts start. Samantha and Amy push Neil into doing something. Angela and Dog finally get the cats to chase the toy mice. Quinn and Tommy argue over Kendle. Another storm knocks out the power. They're adrift. Quinn admits he has feelings for Kendle. Brittani wants to lead her own team now. Charlie says he left the Eagles because he's scared he can't live up to his mom's legacy. He knows she wants him to take over when she's gone. Pam curses Kendle.

-40 miles behind Safe Haven, Marc's mission team sneaks onboard the UN ship the refugees are using to chase Safe Haven. They spend a lot of time in dirty water. They find Kronus, one of the angels



from the Weigh Station. They clear the ship and head for home with the UN captain, Lila, and Kronus. While on the way, Jennifer breaks a rule and shares her gifts with Kyle. He gets the good half.

-Eagles break the no betting rule during training thanks to Kendle and Morgan. Kendle is blacklisted from the Eagles. Ed and one of the cats break a rib in a fall. Ray and Grant become an official couple. Candy makes her claim on Conner public and challenges the age law. Kendle tells most of her backstory to the Eagles.

-The mandatory camp meeting starts. Angela exposes: Theo for lying about still being paralyzed. Leeann tried to run away again. James has been sleeping while on guard duty over the boss at night. Randal has been giving candy bars to the former slave kids for sex. Panaji has been stealing to have a stock of food if things go crazy. Vicky has been stealing seeds from the garden to be able to grow crops when she sneaks off. Angela told the guards to let Seth and Becky escape because she feels bad for Becky. Ramer has been stealing drugs because he's an addict. Blake assaulted a cat and Ed. Candy and Conner broke the age law. The meeting is interrupted by the news that Seth and Becky have been murdered.

-Neil doesn't know who he is. All the evidence points to him. Neil is arrested for their murders. The brig guards give statements. One of them is losing hair. Neil's team and Samantha bunk in the brig to protect him and go over all of the evidence.

### **December 2<sup>nd</sup>**

-The Eagles give Samantha bullets and support. Samantha slaps Angela. Tonya admits she cooked meth before the war. Randal is sentenced to death. Neil's trial starts. His mind is full of the same clouds that were in the Weigh Station.

-Marc's group gets back in time to save the ship from an angry refugee, Rachel, who tries to blow up the bridge. Adrian and Jennifer make a deal to save Kyle's life and remove Adrian's gift. Marc and Angela are officially engaged. Kendle sees the ring and starts snapping again. Marc's team all tell the jury they think their demons killed Seth and Becky while they were gone, creating doubt. Angela knows something isn't right but not what. Tracy starts showing signs of being unhappy now that Charlie has resigned from the Eagles. Neil is found not guilty. Adrian and Marc's trials are held. Adrian is now on conditional banishment. Marc has been fully cleared.

-Angela asks Marc to find out the truth about Neil. Ivan officially, and cruelly, breaks up with Jayda for being a blabbermouth. Jayda joins the Eagles.

Allison and Zack have a spark. Timmy makes a move on Cathy, the cougar. Courtney admits she's pregnant by a man who already has a mate. Claire and Doug start dating. Debra and Theo fight over his lie. Marc promises Cody they're going to find his missing sister. Guards hear the beeping in the cargo area again. It's almost non-stop now. Ben, a top Eagle, knows who killed Seth and Becky and hides it.

-The Eagles interrogate Kronus. The men are showing signs of rashes, peeling skin, and hair loss. Neil admits everything to Samantha. He didn't lose his memory. He murdered two people. He has a sleep gift. Samantha agrees to marry him. Marc heard it all. He makes love to Angela while Adrian observes and then he tells her about Neil. He cries in her arms over the loss of his best friend's honor and his own.

-Adrian also cries, unable to stand being teamed with Marc while he loves Angela. Angela smiles because she was able to make Adrian cry. The Geiger counter in the cargo bay keeps warning them of high radiation levels, but no one understands what it is.

# Book 12 Recap

## December 3<sup>rd</sup>

-In Ciemus, Willaim can't reach Safe Haven on the radio. He cracks. He and Brandon fight. Donna unlocks her gifts to stop them. William leaves.

-David and the family he's now protecting pack up and head west. David dreams about Alexa.

-William makes it to the beach where Safe Haven set sail from. He kills refugees who attack him. A small family joins him for protection as they all mourn Safe Haven's absence.

## December 4<sup>th</sup>

-On the cruise ship, Neil says they have to stay in their cabin, that people are sick. Missy and a group of kids, along with two den mothers, move to the cargo floor and take shelter in one of the containers. Kenn tells Tonya there's trouble, that Angela's ill. Tonya goes to the lab while Kenn takes over point and temporary leadership of the camp.

-Kyle finds Jennifer passed out and takes her to the infirmary. Ray brings Grant in. The medics already have patients waiting for help. Ray verifies Angela is alive. She locks them down. Kenn is now officially in charge. The ship is anchored in the

Caribbean Sea, a week away from the Cayman Islands.

-Gus locks down the mess. Charlie takes Candy and Tracy to the cargo area to wait it out. They join the kids who are already hiding there. Charlie goes to the infirmary to help. A lot of other camp kids are brought into the infirmary, overwhelming the few medics. Jennifer stops breathing. Charlie brings her back.

-Martin wants out of the lounge. Adrian and Jeff make him stay even though Sabrina just died in there with them. The ship is under quarantine. Kenn gathers the healthy people for instructions from Angela's notebook. They figure out it's radiation exposure and that the patients were on the top deck. They decide to move the ship. They split into crews. In the brig, Kronus shouts to be let out so he can help. He takes Katie hostage as she brings in food. Adrian frees her. Ramer says not to let him out of the brig or he'll go straight for the drugs again.

-Ozzie and Whitney start moving the ship. They know the radiation levels up there are dangerous. They send the rest of their team back down into the ship. Doug is brought into the infirmary. The crews send in medications to use. Jeff and Shawn know where the kids are in the cargo bay. They don't tell anyone. Eagles come out to help the work crews. Shawn goes to the infirmary to be with Pam. Quinn

comes out of Kendle's cabin, where he spent a wild night. Allison tells them she's sterile and has cancer. Dog comes to protect Kenn. They start burning bodies. Eight people have died so far, with a dozen more ill. Ian starts tracking down their missing people.

### **December 5<sup>th</sup>**

-Ian drops off supplies to the kids and women in the cargo bay. Neil heads to Angela's cabin. Kenn gets a crew together and also goes to Angela. He finds Neil caring for her and Marc. Ivan is taken to the infirmary. They've now had 11 deaths. Half of them were kids. Angela tells Neil to get Jayda ready for Eagle tryouts and kai. Angela finds out Jennifer is sick. She leaves Marc in the cabin with Neil and goes to the infirmary.

-Kronus is still demanding to be let out. He knew they were going to get sick. Amy and Samantha talk about Seth's death. The Eagles drug Kronus with the food to buy time. Kenn puts Jeff on duty over Tonya and the lab. He realizes the boat team has been topside too long. They find Ozzie and Whitney almost dead and take them to the infirmary. Theo takes over sailing the ship. Some of the Eagles start cracking over burning bodies. They've now had 13 deaths. Zack and Allison stay at the incinerator to handle the dead. Camp members are starting to panic. Little Sally tells her father to steal a gun and

kill Angela in revenge for the death of Rachel, her mother, who tried to blow up the bridge.

### **December 6<sup>th</sup>**

-Someone tries to break into the mess and steal food. Brittani gets into an argument with Brian, the camp drunk. She punches him. Neil drugs Marc's soup to keep him in bed like Angela wants. Theo drops anchor in a clear spot, about two days away from the Cayman Islands. There's a fight in the mess between Trinity, Jayda, and Brittani. They are all taken to the brig. Kronus grabs Brittani. Adrian uses his reserve energy to save her. Jayda is put in charge of the brig because there's no one else to do it. Angela sees Tonya comfort the ship and realizes they have a bond.

-Rose is taken to the infirmary after Sheldon shoots her. He thought she was a zombie. Ed steps up and helps in the infirmary even though he has a broken rib. Kenn gives Corey, a mid-level Eagle, point so he can take a needed break. Marc beats the hell out of Neil even while deathly ill.

### **December 7<sup>th</sup>**

-Leeann is brought to the infirmary. The medics are completely overwhelmed now and out of many of the supplies they need. Kenn says loved ones from the camp can go in and help. They've now had 15 deaths: Sabrina, Gloria, Sean, Wallace, Ozzie, Darren, Lydia, Faith, Lou, Serio, Cassie, Gina,

Amber, Nathan, Rose. Kenn puts Debra and Conner on point overnight. Tonya senses he's hiding something from her.

-Marc finally gets out of his cabin and is sent to help in the infirmary. Angela is there too. Zack is taken to the infirmary from spending so much time burning bodies. Kendle catches Vicky outside the locked weapons room. Camp people are roaming areas they're not allowed to be in. Light looting is happening. Kendle tells the people in the mess that Brittani was injured and taken to the infirmary. Amy and Courtney both fall ill, sending fresh panic through everyone. It's a second wave of illnesses and they don't know how those people were exposed.

-Camp people panic. Brian tries to file charges for Brittani punching him. He pistol whips Ian and runs off. Twelve camp members head for the lifeboats with bags and pockets full of gear and supplies. Tonya calls and says the water on the ship is where the secondary wave came from. They start flushing out the water system. The 12 camp people decide to stay.

-Marc starts helping the ill people make their wills. Wade reveals many, many affairs, some with women who have mates. He also reveals Kenn had an affair with Courtney. Her baby might be his. Brittani regains consciousness. She can't find her



brother Lou. She sees Daryl is dying and stays with him. Camp people come in to help the medics. Brittani takes charge and gets them working to give the medics a break. Samantha arrives with Amy, who is very ill now. Marc has to be stopped from draining himself to help the dying kids.

-Camp members threaten Kenn and the Eagles. They want off the boat. Kronus has been drugged again. Adrian is on duty over the brig while Jayda sleeps. Missy warns Kenn that Tonya is in danger. Courtney finds out Kenn knows she's pregnant. The leaving camp people start a riot. People are stabbed and shot. The fleeing people take the lifeboat this time. They plan to sail back to the UN ship that was left behind when they moved the cruise ship out of the fallout zone. Theo tells Marc they have two days of fuel left.

-Missy shouts for Kenn to protect Tonya. At the infirmary, people are being moved around for cleaning. No one notices Brian hiding under a couch until he comes out shooting, almost killing Tonya. She is saved by James, one of the soldiers from the fight with the government who captured her. Conner uses his gifts and manages to help a few of their patients. Tonya figures out Kenn and Courtney had an affair. The IDC kill team leaves for their run.

**December 8<sup>th</sup>**

-Some of the Eagles have a meeting about going back to America now and about changing leaders. Marc sends Neil and Adrian out with Molly to clear a refueling spot for them in the Cayman Islands at one of the floating fuel stations. Marc asks Adrian how to become byzantine. Five more Eagles take off in a lifeboat. Dog tells Angela he wants a pure blood mate. Kronus starts showing signs of being ill from drinking the water in his cell.

-Angela puts Kendle on duty over Marc while he sails the ship. Brittani finds out Lou died. Kenn tells Tonya that Courtney's pregnant. Missy looks ahead for them to the refueling stop. The kids do an intervention with Kenn. Neil apologizes to Marc. Kronus keeps swearing he can save their dying people. One of the camp members hears it and goes to Angela about it. Tonya helps Courtney even though she hates her. Kendle finds out she's been cursed. She snaps a little more at a new rejection from Marc's.

## **December 9<sup>th</sup>**

Location: [21.263244, -85.508671](#)

-Neil's team reaches the refueling floaties. Molly is almost killed by a great white shark that starts hunting her.

-Now sailing the cruise ship, Marc finally confronts Kendle about trying to kill Angela. They make a

truce. Little Sally tries to shoot Marc because he killed her mother. Another group of camp members and Eagles take a lifeboat, including Corey and Martin. The ship is attacked by a group of former camp members who made it there ahead of the ship while they were dealing with the radiation illness. Molly figures out Neil's secret. She rushes to Angela as the refueling crew starts gassing up the big ship.

-Marc sends Adrian to check on the boat they're towing while they're stopped. Adrian is captured by a UN trap team waiting on that boat. They snuck closer when the former camp members attacked, providing a distraction. Sadie, the magic user on that trap team, jumps overboard after she accidentally kills one of her own teammates. Kendle tells Marc that Adrian has been taken captive.

-Neil and Angela have a brief, ugly talk about his lies and crimes. The Cayman King calls and demands to be paid for the fuel they're taking. Angela agrees to come and meet him. Marc sends Kendle in her place. He tells her to accidentally kill Adrian instead of rescuing him. On her way out, Kendle catches Vicky at the weapons room again and knocks her out. A call comes in Eagle code that they have intruders on the ship.

-Candy is taken to the infirmary, not sure if she's in labor early. A trap team tries to grab the kids who

can control time. Ramer is holding Kenn hostage in the infirmary so he can get drugs. Angela saves him. Another trap team lets Kronus out of his cell and escorts him to the waiting ship while the rest go to the bridge to take over the cruise ship and sail it to the IDC with all of their targets on board. Molly reveals she has cancer. The same shark is still hunting her. The trap team reaches the bridge and faces Neil and Marc.

-Things reach a peak in the infirmary with several deaths. Kronus, who escaped his UN escort by draining him, comes in and tells Angela he can save them. Angela puts it to a vote. The camp votes in favor of it, against her wishes. Kronus ascends and brings Orin back down with him, saying Orin's blood can be used for the cure.

-Kendle rescues Adrian and kills the trap team that took him. A group of Cayman Island locals help her. Orin takes Angela captive as soon as he reaches the infirmary. Brittani is shot in the leg. Kronus slows time so Orin can't kill her yet. Angela reaches out to the other king and invites him to talk right as the bullet is fired that will kill her once and for all.

-Angela talks to the other king about many things, including what would happen if she lets herself be killed. She and the other king form a fast bond. She gets information about the Creator and his child, Sarah. Angela says to send the girl back to earth

again so they can try to make her good. The other king tells her how to fight Nature in that final battle. He also tells her he wants to be loved or released from the job. He's not Satan. His name is Michael Mitchel.

-Kenn takes the bullet for Angela. Kronus and Orin are killed. As they die, Angela collapses and ascends, taking many of the dying people in the infirmary with her. Adrian returns and gets new rules from Marc. They are Angela's orders: No unauthorized Mitchel breeding. All previous deals are void. His gifts are locked.

-Marc is now byzan from all of the lifeforces Angela gave him to save him. He makes Adrian the Keeper for their kind. Marc assigns Jennifer and Kyle to the run to go find his missing daughter. He gives Zack's son, Mike, the secret job of monitoring the radio. The battle for the Weigh Station begins.

### **December 10<sup>th</sup>**

-Back in America, William senses Angela ascended and flips out. He burns the refugees on the beach. Donna gets the special water in Ciemus to banish William from their town. She and Brandon become lovers. Nancy is captured by slavers. David and the small family make it through an earthquake and keep driving west as fast as they can go. Sally thinks Angela died and celebrates. Dog's mate is still with her. Soldiers start coming out of bunkers all over the

country to test the land, air, and water for their return to living topside. Billy keeps rolling west toward the mysterious voice that now controls his every waking movement.

-Angela and her group fight and kill all of the angels at the Weigh Station. Then they start killing The Messenger. She estimates it will take 10 days to get through all of his lives.

### **December 10<sup>th</sup>-20<sup>th</sup>**

The ship is anchored a few days south of the Cayman Islands. Marc is in charge and making nightly notes about everything that's happening while Angela and the others are gone. He slowly begins putting things back together and handling all the ugly details of an outbreak aftermath. Adrian isn't handling being locked and separated from her very well. He starts to crack. The Eagles revoke Adrian's conditional banishment. Adrian tells everyone the truth about Neil, but the camp doesn't care. They hear calls saying William is drawing their kind and consuming them. Leeann tries to run away again. Marc locks her gifts and uses a memory charm.

### **December 21<sup>st</sup>**

-Angela and some of her fighters return. Those who don't return have taken the place of the angels at the Weigh Station, like Doug and Romeo. Zack corners Cathy about being a cougar with his son and gets

her to agree to leave the boy alone. Marc drugs Neil and locks him in a bathroom for revenge. Then he tosses Adrian overboard.

-Angela came back with a glare over her sight that lets her see the evil in people. She gets a moment alone and sees she's not the same now. All that time at the Weigh Station has given her a shifting glow under her skin that she refuses to let out. It's her wings. So far up to book #22, she has never opened them.

-Courtney tells Kenn she loves him. If Tonya doesn't want him anymore, Courtney does. Tonya tells James she's not interested. Tonya is invited to sit at the boss's table in the mess for the first time. Kendle tells Quinn he has to share her. The lifeboat of deserters can't find the UN ship. The kill team has it; they are on their way to the IDC. They tell Conner he isn't one of the team. He's their prisoner.

### **December 23<sup>rd</sup>**

-Adrian starts making friends with Sadie, the member of the trap team who jumped overboard. She climbed back up. He starts recording the history of their kind. Daryl and Brittani are now engaged. The normals start twitching around the magic users. Angela holds a short meeting about the problems between the normals and descendants.

-Everyone goes topside for a funeral service where they release balloons with the names of the dead. Angela tells her camp they're going to the IDC to rescue their people and wipe out the UN forces there. Marc tells Adrian that Conner is being handed over to the UN. Angela has Marc lock her gifts so she can't hear Adrian screaming for her.



# Book 13 Recap

## December 23<sup>rd</sup>

-The ship is still anchored in the Atlantic ocean for recovery time. Angela tells the camp what happened at the Weigh Station and promises she won't ever stop until she confirms their exact origins and purpose. Adrian is recording the moment for their history book. Angela tells the camp she can't ascend anymore and their loved ones can't come down. It's a lie. Everyone realizes it's now three years to the final battle, not four. They've used one of them. It's been a year since the war. Because of her tireless work, Tonya is now a highly respected member of camp.

-Angela is openly training Marc to use his gifts. Candy is demanding to know where Conner is. The recharges begin. Dog saves Allison from a dangerous spider. Theo built a memorial in the chapel for their lost loved ones. Wade's souvenirs are delivered to several people in camp, including Jayda and Theo. When they get to Courtney, Wade proposes to her because the baby might be his. Ian is promoted to leader of the special protection team and put in training directly under Kenn.

-During the recharging sessions, Angela sneaks out and has a meeting with her team. It isn't the first

time. They find out many of their men and women can't have kids. Wade unlocks his gifts. He's a magnet, like Adrian, which is very rare. Angela unlocks Zack. Morgan and Marc use Morgan's new x-ray gift to examine Allison's tumor. They can't remove it yet. Morgan admits to being in love with Jennifer. Ralph and Daisey move in together. Angela tells Charlie she'll adjust to Tracy, but to watch her carefully. Safe Haven only has 19 kids left now. Amy admits she pushed Neil into removing Seth. Amy tells Marc someone is hunting Angela. Kendle denies that it's her. Neil is forgiven by almost everyone after it's revealed that Seth left his wife and daughter for dead right after the war.

-Mike and Leeann start spending time together. Tracy and Emma get into a fight. Morgan saves the baby. Candy tries to talk to Adrian about Conner. Ian tells her the boss says wait two weeks or go to the brig for communicating with the traitor. Candy agrees to wait but warns them if Conner isn't back by then she's leaving to go find him herself. Wade confronts Marc about his cracks. Tracy decides getting rid of the pregnancy will make her mind normal again and fix her relationship.

### **December 24<sup>th</sup>**

-The kill team is in the Atlantic ocean, a few days behind the Adrianna. Conner is still a captive. The kill team begins training him as an Eagle. They also give him a loving correction for breaking the age

law with Candy. Conner gets out a radio call for help.

-The International Detention Center in the Atlantic ocean, two days from Cape Horn. The IDC commander, Joel, is hunting fugitive descendants. His son, Joey, is lonely and learning from his father. The IDC is tracking Safe Haven and many other targets. Cate Brady is being trained in sessions that tempt her to kill so she will evolve a time reset gift. Joel is obsessed with Jennifer. The IDC hears Conner's radio call for help.

### **December 26<sup>th</sup>**

-On the Adrianna, Neil is given a loving correction by Angela's team. Kenn verifies Courtney's baby is his. She tells him there's a war coming between the normals and the magic users. Leadership finds out Jennifer is pregnant. She is pulled from the run to go find Marc's daughter. Tracy shows stronger signs of being unstable. A camp member who lost a child to the radiation sickness, Bob, threatens Marc with a gun. Tim starts giving grief counseling sessions to people.

### **December 28<sup>th</sup>**

-The second half of the recharges begin. The ship is moving south again. Bernice and her daughter are found in a floating pile of debris and rescued. Bernice asks for protection from pirates. Bob tries to kill Angela and is shot by Ray. Ivan agrees to

escort Angela into the wilderness when she snaps. Neil starts noticing Wade is acting oddly. Samantha says Wade is avoiding her. Theo is sterile. Kendle is forced to tell everyone there are pirates on Pitcairn Island. She wanted everyone to die so she would become byzan. Charlie admits he doesn't want to get married. They find out Dog isn't happy. He's lonely. People start finding out Angela's gifts are locked.

-Gus and Jeff are given an ultimatum to commit to the Eagles or resign. Marc admits he doesn't want to give leadership back to Angela. He manages to hide his biggest secret from everyone else. Quinn and Tommy agree to share Kendle. Jayda beats Neil at knife throwing. Ian wants Bernice. He thinks being a magic user would get her attention. James tries to get Tonya to give him a chance. Francesca tries to get Jeff's attention. They find out Marc is planning to go against Angela on the reset. Dog admits he snuck ants onto the ship and hid them in the garden area.

### **December 29<sup>th</sup>**

-The kill team blows up a patrol boat from the UN before it can call in a sighting of Safe Haven. Adrian tells Conner to make their family proud. He sees that Conner has mental cracks. Drew tells them he's Marc's spy. Greg tells them he came on this run to die.

### **December 30<sup>th</sup>**

-Jennifer tells Angela about a dream where she kills Kyle, the camp is wiped out, and then she is consumed by Joel. Neil asks Wade why he's avoiding Samantha. Wade begs Marc to lock his gifts and take away his memories so Neil doesn't find out what he's hiding. Kendle wants the reset so she can be with Luke again. Tim shows he can't be an Eagle anymore. Gus breaks up with Trinity. He's still hurting over Brittani. He picks the Eagles. Jeff resigns.

### **December 31<sup>st</sup>**

-The Atlantic ocean near Argentina. Safe Haven celebrates the new year. Ivan signs up for Angela's private kill team list. Everyone knows Angela's gifts are locked now. Angela and many of the radiation sickness patients have been cleared to restart training. Neil wants Angela to take back over the camp now. Her female team does a demonstration that convinces most of the Eagles that women don't have to be treated differently in training.

### **January 2<sup>nd</sup>**

-At the IDC, Joel is still trying to get Cate to kill. She refuses. One of their trap teams captures Tobias and his wives. Joel says the magic users are taking over the world, with unknowing help from the UN. They arrange a greeting for the kill team bringing in Conner. Little Joey sneaks out to meet Cate. Joey

tells her Safe Haven is coming here to kill them all. Upon arrival at the IDC, Conner is knocked out and handed over to Alexander Mitchel, his uncle. Alexander has been on the UN payroll for a long time, but he isn't loyal to them. His one goal in life is to kill his brother and all of that branch.

-The kill team starts planting explosives. Greg is immune to sleep spells. Shawn is affected by sleep spells, but he can fight it. The kill team is interrogated and then given jobs. Joey sneaks in for another visit with Cate. The pirates come in with new prisoners. The kill team is assigned to train Joel's army. Jordi, the IDC XO, talks to Alexander about Joel's insanity. Alexander bonds with Conner so he can reach Adrian to kill him.

### **January 7<sup>th</sup>**

-On the Adrianna, Gus asks to leave. Marc assigns Wade, Neil, and Samantha to start evaluating everyone they haven't gotten to yet. Candy tells Marc she loves Conner. Neil puts Wade and Samantha alone together to watch them. He has figured out Wade's secret. The normals watch the magic training and get twitchier. Cathy is still hunting Timmy even though she's an Eagle now and she promised Zack she would leave the underage boy alone. Emma is still hunting Charlie even though she's an Eagle now, she was corrected for it once already, and she's been having fear-fighting lessons with Wade and the other senior men. Tracy's

baby uses magic in front of the normals. Tracy gets scared too. James is suspended from the Eagles.

-Adrian and Sadie continue to get closer. Kendle learns Marc will be the one to remove her in the end, but she refuses to believe it. Kimmie starts stalking and scaring Francesca to keep her away from Jeff. Angela meets with Bernice. Gus is immediately hooked by the beautiful woman, keeping him from asking again to leave. Peter shows signs of being in love with Tonya. He offers to remove James for her. The kids make charmed pictures. Missy asks Pam to be her new mom.

-Eagle tryouts start. Stanley is the only one who passes the speed test against Dog. Angela passes her final kia test. The descendants do a mock battle on the top deck. The normals get agitated, now whispering and talking in groups. Charlie talks to Tonya about forgiving Kenn. Kendle keeps the normals stirred up with quiet conversations and in dream walks. Jennifer tells Kyle he's going to be a father.

### **January 8<sup>th</sup>**

-Cody's gifts unlock. The normals see it and remember the kids are also deadly. Ramer is out of the brig now; he goes missing. The normals refuse to help with the magic kids anymore. The stowaway ants are put into an aquarium. Camp people ask for Kendle to be forgiven and let back into all parts of

camp life. Tommy is sterile. Neil and Kyle make peace. Neil confronts Wade. Wade admits he's in love with Samantha. Dog and the cats have an intervention with Tonya and Kenn. Neil talks to Samantha about Wade and asks her to check him out. Amy runs off and Wade handles it. Samantha kisses Wade to see if there's an attraction. They have an amazing spark. Neil and Amy are thrilled. Wade joins their family.

-Bernice argues with the other normals about the magic users. She has a small bond with Gus now. Ian sees Kendle talking to a group of normals. She's been dream walking again. She tries it on Marc, but is interrupted by Cate contacting Marc. Cate came to beg him not to kill her when they attack the IDC and to get a glimpse of her father before she dies. It's also the first time Marc has seen his daughter. Adrian starts training Sadie to be an Eagle, while also recording more of the descendant history.

### **January 9<sup>th</sup>**

-Part of a support beam falls on the top deck, knocking Marc and Kendle into the ocean. During the panic, Marc sees what she's been doing and banishes her. Marc locks her gifts while acting like he took them permanently, hoping it will be enough to keep her in line. The normals think he's leaving her for dead and start rebelling.



-Kendle is picked up by Adrian. Angela tries to talk to the normals. It goes so badly that it snaps the lock on her gifts. Marc has to stop her from doing something drastic. Pirates show up as she is leaving the ship to join Adrian. She decimates them with fire without trying to see why they're there. Her feeling of betrayal after all she's done and lost for the normals are widening her mental cracks. Marc unlocks Adrian so he can help her win the battle in her mind.

-Quinn and Tommy try to make a deal with Marc to bring Kendle back. Roy joins Jennifer's family. He is Autumn's half-brother. All of the descendants have guards now, against the normals. A group of normals try to take over the ship. Ray unlocks his gifts to save Grant and the ship. Brittani and Daryl consummate their relationship. Angela tells Marc he can kill Adrian in the crossfire of the next battle.

### **January 11<sup>th</sup>**

The normals start a riot. Angela saves them from Marc. A group of them leave in a lifeboat at dawn because Angela won't share her power with them. Marc now has the glowy thing under his skin. Marc and Ivan start bonding. Ralph has a meeting with the remaining normals, trying to make peace. Gus makes his choice and fully joins in the Eagles now, because of Bernice. Angela figures out the descendants have a hive connection to let them monitor each other for trouble.

## **January 12<sup>th</sup>**

-The fight at the IDC. The poison green gas is used, along with magic, bullets, and swords as the pirates join the UN forces against Safe Haven. Morgan starts to hate Marc because he would have traded Jennifer for his daughter. Angela banishes Joel to Hell in place of the other king. The pirates lose half of their men and ships and abandon the fight. Joey and Cate join Safe Haven. Marc goes into the death sleep from trying to absorb Cate's alpha death spell. The kill team blows up the IDC. Alexander tries to kill Conner. Drew gives his life for Greg. Drew wakes up in the Weigh Station with Doug and the others. We see Ozzie is also there.

-They rescue Tobias and several other prisoners. Jordi escapes. Adrian is mortally wounded. Angela cuts his ship loose and leaves him there. Tonya tells Kenn to move back in with her. James snaps and starts to hit her. Kenn throws James overboard. They find Ramer's body. He overdosed on his hidden stash. Angela guides Marc out of the death sleep. Marc meets his daughter. Angela tells the normals the truth, that the descendants only exist to die for them.

-James makes it to Adrian's ship and tries to take over. Adrian is dying. James helps them save Adrian and then Sadie kills James. Sadie tells Kendle she's obsessed with Adrian. She wants to help Kendle get

rid of Angela. They set sail to follow the cruise ship toward the tip of South America.

-Connor proposes to Candy. Shawn admits to taking pictures of women and girls. They're in his burn box. Jennifer confronts Morgan. Kyle tells them he already knew Morgan is in love with Jennifer. Grant worries about eternal damnation because of his sexual orientation. Ray helps him through it. The kids heal Angela's cracks. Ivan makes the right choice about their future. Marc tells Ivan he'll be the one to end up with Angela, that he's going back to die for the normals in her place.

# Book 14 Recap

## January 13<sup>th</sup>

-Near the Falkland islands. Samantha shows signs of delivering soon. Wade figures out William wanted Samantha's twins for a time reset. Somchai Abbot calls for a rescue from Port Stanley. Allison collapses. Her cancer is getting worse. Conner helps her. They schedule a descendant surgery and find out all governments had the cures for cancer. All of the founding lines start donating blood. Medical privacy is added to the constitutional topics for the council. Jennifer gets Joey, Tobias and his wives, and Laura and her nieces settled. They're all survivors of the IDC battle. Conner tells Angela she has family still alive. The radio has gone quiet. Angela connects Ray to the hive.

-Missy accidentally slows time as she is reunited with Shawn. The new people feel it and start trying to figure out which kid is a time controller. Joey is reunited with Cate. They have a strong bond. Angela unlocks Jayda's gifts. Angela adds Morgan to the council. She realizes she's never had to use her alpha draw on some people. Angela begins the settling process with Cate and unlocks her gifts. The medics start prepping for Samantha's delivery. Missy and Shawn see a vision that shows them as a couple in the future. Shawn says he'll leave until she

grows up. Conner is sent to enjoy downtime with his kill team, making him an official Eagle.

### **January 14<sup>th</sup>**

-A mental bell brings a team of Eagles from their beds for the next run. Lisa and her click of rookie females are being harassed. Greg helps them. Stanley and Richie become gophers for the Special Forces teams. Daryl has a moment with Brittani's dad; her family doesn't approve of them being a couple. Angela punishes Missy for the time slow by making her a gopher and then putting her to work. Female Eagle evaluations in the gym get dangerous when they're all PMSing and one of the rookies holds up chocolate. Angela puts Missy and Dog on guard duty together, patrolling the ship.

-Charlie tells Marc the counseling session Tim gave Tracy didn't work. The new diving team gets set to check the underside of the ship while they're anchored for a pickup. Samantha is put on bed rest. Cathy tells Timmy she can't date him until he's older, trying to improve her image with the camp and the Eagles. Tommy and Quinn stop doing Eagle duties and spend all their free time together, trying to figure out how to save Kendle.

-Monica hits on Molly. Angela assigns Kimmie as another private gopher to keep her out of trouble. Greg has a new fear of magic. Leeann tries to get the horse to talk to her. Debra is assigned to help

Laura and her nieces settle in. Ed is assigned to the medics officially. Debra and Theo start making peace.

### **January 14<sup>th</sup>**

-Stanley Harbor, also known as Port Stanley. A flock of blind birds cover the deck of the ship and strip the fish they're collecting. Another group of normals come up and take a lifeboat to shore without knowing anything about the area. Grant is told he and Ray are breaking the rules by being on duty together. Angela challenges Brittani, who hasn't been training or trying to become an Eagle anymore. Brittani shouts at her for Daryl being sent out on a run so soon after being ill. She wants him to resign.

-Jayda tells Brittani she wants the XO slot on Angela's team. The underwater repair team seals a crack in the hull of the ship. Trent goes missing from the underwater repair team while they're working. He was kidnapped. Marc senses an American descendant named Chuck on the island. They start refueling the ship.

-Somchai's group is on the small island, waiting to be picked up. Renard runs off to warn the pickup team they're walking into a trap. Renard is captured by Chuck's trackers. Jennifer uses her new gift to replay the kidnapping and locate Trent. He's on the island. Angela lets Jennifer join the rescue team

-Charlie talks to Tracy about an abortion so her mind will stop cracking. Missy and Dog become friends. Ian shows signs of not liking kids. Emma is caught hunting teenagers again and removed from the Eagles. Then she's sent to the brig. Candy starts cleaning the cargo bay. She's in nesting mode. Greg teaches the new rookie men another lesson on respecting females with an empty brownie box. Lisa reveals her interest in him.

-The pickup team talks about Courtney's baby. Tonya wants it taken as soon as its born. They rescue Somchai and his group. Kyle finds out Jennifer is on the island with Trent's rescue team. They find out Laura lied about the race wars as a distraction. Jennifer and the rescue team kill Chuck and save Trent. He has a crushed ankle and has been carved up. They leave behind a camp of women who are pregnant with Chuck's evil offspring.

-The ship is having small fires that draw the guards away. Another fire starts at the refueling hoses and causes a massive explosion that destroys the dock. The cruise ship barely avoids it and sails away without their teams. Those teams meet up and take the RIBS back. Kyle is furious with Jennifer for leaving the ship. They fight. He suspends her from the Eagles until after the delivery. She tells him to move out of their cabin, that he doesn't own her.

Kyle tosses his wedding ring at her. Jennifer considers leaving Safe Haven.

-Tobias admits he wants to add Tracy to his harem. Laura kidnaps Cody, Cate, and Missy. Dog tries to fight her and is injured. Shawn kills Laura before she can reset time. Marc resigns from the Eagles and leadership to be with his kids. Shawn wants to be a descendant now so he can protect Missy. Trinity mends Trent's ankle. She's the only one who can repair broken bones so far. Angela sends Timmy to Tonya as a lab assistant. Tonya talks to the ship about repairs. She tells Angela she wants custody of Courtney's baby when it's born. She says Courtney is still being a relief source even while she's pregnant. Debra stays with Laura's nieces. They've become friends.

-Tommy resigns from the Special Forces team. Kyle is put with the level ones for letting personal drama interfere with a run. Jennifer is out of the Eagles until after she delivers. Neil makes Greg their new XO since Jennifer is now out. The refugees from Port Stanley hate magic. Another group of normals take a lifeboat to shore. Jennifer becomes Grant's trainee to sail the ship, along with Shawn.

### **January 16<sup>th</sup>**

-30 miles behind the Adrianna. Sadie helps Kendle unlock her gifts, proving Marc didn't really strip her. Jordi finds them. Kendle unlocks Sadie to help



her. They both kill Jordi. Sadie immediately charms Adrian.

-Toshi and the remaining pirates surround Adrian's ship and take them all captive. Kendle makes a deal with Toshi to kill Angela. They resume following Safe Haven.

### **January 17<sup>th</sup>**

-Brittani resigns from the Eagles. Quinn and Tommy also quit and reveal they're leaving as soon as the ship reaches Pitcairn to go back and help Kendle. They find an abandoned yacht that has been the scene of a slaughter. They bring back three goats. Madison is removed from the Eagles. Charlie yells at Marc for resigning. Tracy tells him she is giving the baby up for adoption when it's born if her mind isn't better then. Zack and Brittani help Jennifer see she doesn't want to end her marriage. Samantha and the other pregnant women are all nesting in the cargo bay now. Kyle and Jennifer come to terms. He says it will be a rule that pregnant women can't be in the Eagles.

-Neil suspects Daryl is in contact with Adrian. They have an engagement party for Ralph and Daisey and Charlie and Tracy. Angela warns Marc that the kids are not allowed to be used as evil-sniffing dogs. Candy tells Angela they're using Conner up too fast on the medical issues. Everyone is prepping for the coming storm. Conner saves Pam with a lifeforce. It

puts her cancer into remission. Kenn and Dog have a bonding moment over the cats. The storm comes. They are hit by a water spout.

-On Adrian's ship, Toshi promises to kill Adrian in revenge for something his father did. Kendle and Toshi have a vicious fight where they are both almost killed. She tells him to aim for Angela's kids and let her drain herself and then they can kill her. They have dinner. Toshi drugs the wine and knocks her out. Sadie cauterizes Adrian's wound. The pain breaks the charm she put on him. Adrian makes her do it again. He doesn't want to be in love with Angela. It doesn't work. This is where they get ahead of Safe Haven, while the cruise ship is without power.

### **January 18<sup>th</sup>**

-Safe Haven is anchored, with no idea where they are. They don't have engines or power at all. They have minor damage from the water spout; they have to replace a relay to get the power going. Neil has to unlock Samantha so she can help Angela. No one knew he'd locked her. She has a vision of a killer on board, a huge fog bank coming, and herds of whales and sharks that are in the middle of a migration. Samantha finds the path they're supposed to be on. They also see the pirates waiting ahead for them.

-Candy finds the relay in the cargo bay. Greg asks Kenn to help him become a descendant so he can

keep up with his team and Marc. Kenn refuses. Ed asks Courtney to dinner. She refuses. Wade agrees to give some of the men lessons on being a relief source. Joey tells Marc the kids can't stay on the island when the others go back for the final battle because the normals will kill them.

-Jennifer and Brittani talk about how things should have been handled with their mates. Angela's witch and Marc's demon are stuck in limbo until their hosts make a hard choice. Grant threads the needle and falls in behind the long line of migrating animals as the ship gets moving again. The guards hear the normals whispering and conspiring. Greg asks Kyle to make him a descendant so he'll have a chance with Angela. Kyle refuses. Samantha and Neil have their first contact with the pregnancy. Courtney finds out Tonya wants to take the baby from her.

-Conner goes missing. Angela kills the normals who took him captive and then she puts a strong charm on all of the other normals, convincing them that they love magic users. Gabe and Peter both show signs of wanting Tonya. Monica and Molly start dating. Angela has the kids heal Marc's cracks even though he doesn't want it.

### **January 19<sup>th</sup>**

-All of the magic users move to the same deck away from the normals. Some of the normals come with

them, but not many. Somchai tells them Samantha is about to give birth. Tonya and Courtney exchange hits. Tonya tells them Courtney only wants the baby for its gifts because she's a normal. Daryl is avoiding and ignoring Brittani to show her what it will be like if they break up over his career. Neil tells Morgan the normal medics, except for Tonya, aren't allowed around Samantha or the babies when she delivers.

-Angela declares that the gifts of all babies have to be locked at birth so they can't be used. She tells Greg she's going to make him a descendant and use him for experiments. They sail through Drake's passage, also known as Drake's Shake or Drake's Lake. It is a very rough ride. Wade holds his first relief source lesson. Angela has Jeff remove Emma for being a predator. He also removes the killer Samantha saw in her vision. Courtney begs Marc for help. She tells him Tonya wants to kill the baby. Samantha's water breaks.

-Neil makes the normal medics leave the infirmary. Samantha tells them she had a teenage pregnancy. Her parents told her the baby boy died at birth, but she heard it cry. They gave it away. Samantha's twin sons are born. We find out Tonya and Tobias have spent time together while she gathered information on descendant medical issues and procedures. This is where his obsession started.

-Marc asks Tonya flat out if she's trying to kill Courtney's baby. Tonya says the baby may have a genetic issue and will likely need to be aborted. So, in a way, yes. Jennifer charms Greg, convincing him that he has no feelings for Angela at all. Still torn up over missing her son, Jennifer drains herself and almost dies. Kyle and Morgan save her. Charlie goes missing. Gus saves Charlie from being tossed overboard by a stowaway with the rage illness. Tim christens Samantha's twins and several other kids.

### **January 21<sup>st</sup>**

-Two days away from their destination. The first baby care class with the men goes very badly. They figure out they need to unlock Eric, Zack's oldest son, and then heal him. He has been in a coma since the fight on the beach the morning Safe Haven set sail. Courtney moves into the cargo bay away from everyone. Shawn is already living there. Being shut out because he's normal has been hard on him. Jennifer gets them both to go back to their cabins. Courtney warns Jennifer that Angela will only protect the normals in that final battle, that Kenn and all their kind is in danger from the boss. Gus tells Daryl to stop being mean to Brittani. Daryl and Brittani talk and work things out. They sneak off to the chapel to get married. They're eloping.

### **January 22<sup>nd</sup>**

-The second baby care class goes even worse than the first one. Tracy's failure at the class contributes

to her rough mental state. Samantha overrules Neil about the normal medics being around the babies. Courtney again tells Tonya they need to protect Kenn, that Angela is going to kill him. Tonya tells Courtney her baby is ill and likely won't make it to term. Kenn assigns Peter and Gabe to watch over Tonya during the coming fight with the pirates. Debra and Theo are spending time together again. He thinks they're a couple again.

-Jennifer and Kyle fully make up. Angela calls them all for a meeting about the upcoming fight. Marc finds out she is using his kids in the battle and flips out. He tries to lock their gifts and they both run to Angela. Cate fires her death spell. Angela takes the hit for Marc. Cody saves her. Marc is cracking again. He found out he's supposed to kill the Creator's wife in that final battle. The cat has three kittens. Dog passes out.

### **January 23<sup>rd</sup>**

-The battle for Pitcairn Island. The green gas is used again. Adrian tells Sadie to kill Kendle. Sadie misses Kendle and kills Toshi with a death spell. The fight with Safe Haven starts. The pirates are all killed. Sadie does the right thing and helps Safe Haven. Kendle is shot. Sadie and Adrian get her to shore. Right as Angela is out of energy, Ralph convinces the normals to come topside and give her energy to finish the fight. Peace is now made

between the normals and the magic users, but no one believes it will hold.

-Tommy and Quinn take off during the fight to help Kendle. Angela saves Sadie's life. Pam and Morgan decide to adopt Joey. Greg knows he is under a charm. The Eagles start keeping Ian away from Bernice; he won't leave her alone. Courtney tries one more time to get Kenn to be with her. Cathy is removed for breaking the age law with Timmy. Timmy is heartbroken that she took his virginity and was sneaking off after telling him she loved him.

-On the island, Kendle is dying from the gunshot. Marc shows up. He starts to smother her, but he can't finish it. He still loves her. He saves her instead. Marc also lets Adrian live. Marc's demon returns now that he made the right choice. Angela's witch returns. Angela joins Adrian at the campfire by Luke's cabin. She and Marc spend the night there while the camp celebrates their arrival on the ship. Kendle tells Tommy and Quinn they can both stay with her. Angela and Sadie fight. She connects Sadie to the hive. Kendle and Adrian are marked as outcasts.

### **January 24<sup>th</sup>**

-Theo finds out he's Debra's relief source now. Jeff and Francesca start dating. Courtney is missing. Eric is finally released from the infirmary. Mike records a radio call from the remaining UN forces.

They're on the way to Pitcairn Island to enslave or kill everyone. A landing party rows to the island.

-Grant begins marrying Marc and Angela. They are interrupted by explosions on the ship. Courtney tried to sink it and kill everyone. Glowing green eyes are watching all of it from the cliff above the beach. They're not alone on the island.



# Book 15 Recap

This entire book takes place on Pitcairn Island and the anchored cruise ship.

## January 24<sup>th</sup>

-Courtney planted explosives that blow up the lab and the infirmary. Conner and the other healers save Jennifer, the medics, Leeann, and Tonya. Two kittens die. Tonya goes into labor. Her son is born a month early as a result. Angela burns Courtney alive even though she is pregnant. Peter admits to sleeping on duty, which allowed Courtney to steal his keys to the weapons room. Kenn shoots Peter in the head. The hive votes and decides not to punish Kenn for it. Grant senses Ray's feelings for Kenn. Wade feels bad that he didn't do more to help Courtney adjust.

-Adrian and Tommy start exploring the island. They figure out they aren't alone and there are tunnels under them. Gabe starts conspiring against Kenn so he can have Tonya. Kenn starts planning Gabe's death. They make plans to walk the island. Daryl and Dwight, Brittani's father, have a talk about his lack of ambition. They finally reveal they are married. Gus punches Daryl. Daryl tells Marc he wants his own team. Ralph wants the job of head den mother. Wade tells Samantha about his past.

Trinity stirs up trouble with Gus and Brittani, still trying to get him back. She hates Brittani now.

-Tim gives Tracy a grief counseling session. She gets him to admit that he knew Courtney was thinking about blowing up the ship. Tim says confessions are confidential. Tracy admits she tried to get rid of the baby and she's still thinking about doing it again. Tim promises he won't tell on her either. Charlie and Kyle hear all of it. Kyle arrests Tim so Kenn can't kill him. Angela calls a meeting of the law council. Samantha is assigned as Tim's lawyer. Kenn tries to get into Tim's cell to kill him. Kyle knocks Kenn out with his new spell and says Kenn tripped. Sherman, a camp member, threatens Samantha about defending Tim. A small group is outside the brig, waiting for a chance to lynch Tim.

-Theo finds out he is no longer an Eagle. He's their engineer. The Eagles start evaluating Megan, who is a rookie from the female evaluation that went so badly. She's missing a tooth from that tryout. Hannah and Ivan have a funny moment when she falls into a tunnel. They see a shadow run off down there. They break the hatches they come to so they can find their way out if they fall through again. Megan sees the green eyes following them. Greg saves Theo from a snake bite.

-The landing team finds the runway and the scene of Kendle and Luke's escape. Darren's gifts unlock.

Megan tells him they can't date because she's not a magic user. They see crocodiles at the creek. They reach the Kraft mansion and decide not to clear it yet. Marc figures out they'll be going to Hell to deal with Joel at some point. They reach the main town and find only three buildings left. All the rest have been burned. Ivan saves Theo from being hit by a falling tree branch.

-They get a new medical center set up on the ship. Kenn demands the right to privacy be removed from the new constitution in every form, including religious confessions. Tonya begs Angela not to punish Kenn for killing Peter. Angela starts testing people quietly to see if any of them can reach the Weigh Station on their own. Angela sends a recon support team to the island.

-Marc's landing team has lunch. A rage-infected survivor from the town finds them. She attacks and is restrained. She dies from a heart attack. Neil takes a blood sample. The medics, Eugene and Christian, are upset that they couldn't save her. Adrian shows up to check on Marc. Kendle stays close to watch Marc. The ship crew starts working on the pontoon bridge. The recon team clears the treehouse clinic on the island and finds the doctor. She attacks them with a knife and is shot. They burn the body. Ian starts thinking about quitting the Eagles.

-Adrian's group makes it to Cliff Road. They decide to camp at the bottom of the hill until morning. The recon team joins Marc's landing party in town. Daryl punches Gus; they're bonding. Timmy starts showing signs of taking comfort in food. Darren has another spark with Megan. Marc sends half of the crew back to the ship. They are decontaminated on the top deck. They give Angela the books from the clinic. Angela sends Darren and Megan on a quiet run to get the treehouse clinic stocked and ready for use. Cody guards the law council meeting and loves how it feels to be like his dad.

-Neil tells Samantha and Wade he doesn't want them on the island. The law council decides all juries will be made up of half normals and half magic users, with Angela breaking any ties. The judge always has to be a magic user to make sure no one is lying. Judges will be elected. The law council realizes they're now the new Supreme Court. They decide Eagles rules and Safe Haven laws apply in the absence of a constitutional document. Tim is arrested officially and charged. Darren visits the relief source area and picks Hannah.

-Cate and Kenn start bonding. The kids are being used for guard duty all over the ship now. Kenn hooks up a powerful radio that can reach all the way to America. Kenn thinks about the Eagle rules they haven't used yet that give him power over the camp even though he's never used them. Jonny hits on

Grant in front of Ray. Ray punches him when he won't stop. Theo is having trouble fitting in now that he's not an Eagle anymore. He and Debra spend private time together. Marc's team spends the night in the barn in town. They see a grounder watching them.

-Kyle doesn't trust Bernice, but he isn't sure why. Conner tells Charlie he's marrying a gold digger who just wants to be the first lady of Safe Haven. Ray and Grant consummate their relationship. Shawn figures out breaking the tunnel hatches let the grounders come up. Angela falls asleep before she gets to the island doctor's notes on the rage illness experiment.

### **January 25<sup>th</sup>**

-Adrian wakes up to find grounders all over their campsite, drawn by the warmth. One of the grounders is Mary Jo, who tormented Kendle the first time she was on this island. Kendle stabs her. They all head for Marc's location to check on him. Adrian sees new cracks in Kendle's mind. He sends Tommy and Quinn to guard the pontoon bridge to the ship.

-Marc's team opens the barn and finds a group of grounders. They try to make contact. The medic, Eugene, accidentally triggers them. The grounders try to kill him. Another group of grounders comes out of the jungle. Big fight here where another

medic, Reggie, has his ribs crushed by a grounder. Neil sees Daryl having contact with Adrian. Angela reads the clinic doctor's books about the islanders all being infected with the rage illness and sends them to Marc so he'll know what he's dealing with. Marc locks down the camp and the ship, and forbids anyone else to come to the island.

-On the ship, Sherman bullies and harasses Tracy because she's been having sessions with Tim. Bernice maces him. Kimmie is still haunting Francesca and scaring her over dating Jeff. Kenn and Dog talk about why Kenn killed Peter. Kenn admits he was already planning it. Megan finds out Darren wants the time reset. They have sex in the clinic. Sadie becomes the den mother of Adrian's little group. Tommy starts looking for a way to get back into Safe Haven.

-Marc's team starts clearing the tunnels. They come up near the clinic and find Megan and Darren working there. Ivan figures out they've mixed business with pleasure. Megan and Darren kill a grounder. It's her first kill. She is scratched. Tobias and his wives volunteer to help with cooking. Jayda tries to talk Charlie out of marrying Tracy. Morgan tells Kimmie to leave Francesca alone. Gabe comes in to the infirmary and passes out.

-Samantha warns them a nasty storm is coming. Hannah comes to the infirmary with the same

symptoms as Gabe. Tonya asks Angela to get Tim to christen her son, with Kenn in attendance and no one dying. Trinity has become a sneak and a spy for her own gain. She trips Brittani and acts like it was an accident.

-On the island, Marc's team is clearing the tunnels again after a short lunch. Eugene is babbling, afraid. He thinks he's going to die on this run. Nature attacks with bugs and sharp vines. Eugene is stabbed through the throat. Adrian's group is also attacked by Nature.

-Marc is buried by a ground collapse. They dig him out while Nature and a group of grounders attack. Megan is sent to the ship for her scratch. They take Eugene's body back. The group is decontaminated. Tonya's newborn isn't breathing well. No one can heal Reggie's broken ribs.

-Adrian's group runs into a large cluster of grounders. Marc's team helps them. Christian, the medic, is killed by a grounder. Marc's scorn is starting to get to Quinn. Marc's team heads back to the ship. Tonya's son stops breathing. Kimmie cuts off Francesca's braid and puts it under Jeff's pillow. Kimmie is arrested and taken to the brig. Brittani gets revenge on Trinity by tripping her while she's carrying a bedpan. War is declared between them. Kendle, Quinn, and Tommy stay in town to wait out the storm and nightfall. Adrian finds a small bunker

under a shack and claims it. Then he joins Sadie in Luke's old bunker.

-Marc's group gets the decontamination wash. Marc immediately has a reaction, solving the mystery of Hannah and Gabe collapsing. The antibiotics and magic treatments seem to be making Megan's scratch worse. Darren and Megan are officially a couple now. The storm moves in. Gus tries to talk to Charlie about marrying Tracy. Ian is offended when Bernice refuses to have dinner with him. Trinity and Brittani have the first magic duel in front of the camp. Brittani is taken to the brig. Trinity is taken to the infirmary. Samantha handles Kimmie and Britanni while also finding more loopholes for the law council to close. Kimmie is released to Jeff's custody. Brittani is released to her husband.

-They move the ship to the cove for more protection and find the ocean pulling their other ships away. One is already loose. The one closest to the cruise ship is about to break free. That tanker will sink the cruise ship if it hits them. Shawn makes a crazy choice and jumps off the cruise ship to save them all. He makes it to the other ship and gets it under control. While there, he hears the UN calling and finds out double the number of ships are coming than they'd first thought.

-The storm is bad, tossing things and people around. Many of them are injured, including Sherman, who



is hit in the chest with a chair so hard that his heart stops. Tracy is terrified that her baby did it to him. Reggie is killed when the storm tosses him around. One of his broken ribs punctures a lung. Nature is clearly hunting their medics. Kendle and Tommy fight. He leaves her.

### **January 25<sup>th</sup>**

-Conner is in the death sleep. He sees a vision of Candy being killed. Neil confronts Daryl about having contact with Adrian. Conner is able to help Megan's injury. Darren gets twitchier about her safety. Marc has Brittani use her gifts to clean up the mess in the mess after the storm. He tells her to convince everyone it wasn't a magic fight or she'll be banished. Cate and Cody start private lessons with Jennifer.

-Timmy is named Tonya's successor in the lab. Angela and Kenn talk about Tonya being Invisible. Tonya tells Angela everyone in camp has been infected by the rage illness. Samantha refuses Neil's suggestion to leave Safe Haven. Some people already have left and others are thinking about it. They're tired of the death and fighting that always follows the camp. The Eagles see a cave they missed before.

-Brittani and Trinity convince everyone they were practicing for a play and got carried away. They promise to start a drama class. Angela drafts a kill

team for their next battle. Kenn and Tonya renew their engagement. Tommy begs Angela to let him back in. She says she will when he earns it.

-Marc's team goes to finish clearing the tunnels. They clear the cave. It's all muddy and full of water from the storm. The ground gives out under their feet. Almost all of them fall. Nature sends vines, snakes, and more water to flush them away. Daryl is bit by a snake. Morgan is almost crushed by vines. The alligators attack and almost kill Morgan. Marc stabs the roots and figures out how to hurt Nature. Daryl says he and Brittani may leave if magic laws are put in place to rule them. A small tremor traps Sadie in the bunker. Adrian leaves her there to go help Marc.

-Charlie admits Tracy needs a lot of help and he isn't happy with her, but he's trying to do the right thing for his baby. Charlie punches Kenn. Kenn makes sure Charlie won't do that to Tracy. Marc tells him he can't inherit leadership as long as he's with Tracy. Dog tries to help Daryl by attacking the snake head while it's still attached to his arm. They find a large area directly under the town that has more grounders. They give them mercy. They reach the Kraft house and join forces with Adrian's group. On the ship, Angela has gathered the loved ones of the clearing team; they're watching mentally as Marc and the others enter the mansion. It blows up.

-The ship is breached by pirates. Hannah is shot and killed. Tracy is taken captive. Angela rescues her and then forces Tracy to help get information out of the only pirate survivor before she kills him. Tracy has a rough time of it and admits she wants leadership but none of the responsibility.

-The clearing teams are injured but alive. Marc sends them to the ship to help clear it while he waits for Nature, who he can feel coming for them. Marc directs her attention to himself to buy Angela time. Adrian knows what's happening and still leaves Marc to face her alone. Nature tries to get Marc to join her. He tries to use his alpha power on her. The fight starts. Dog snaps off a piece of her antler and is injured. Marc is on his own.

-On the ship, Harry is shot in the arm. Kenn finds Tim protecting Tonya and his son. Bernice's daughter is saved by Theo. Bernice kisses him. Debra slaps him. Theo says something stupid to Bernice. She slaps him. Darren is flipping out about Hannah's death. His brief service moment with her created a deep bond. The rest of the intruders are killed by Adrian and Tommy. Kendle saves Angela's life. Angela finds out they left Marc alone. She punches Adrian.

-Nature and Marc have a badass battle. He manages to hurt her a little, but he can't beat her alone. She impales his ankle. Angela gives Marc the idea to

trade Adrian's energy. When he dies, it will go to Nature, like Angela's will go to the ocean. They bargain a truce so they can stay on the island. It's the only place where they're protected from Nature. Angela lets Tommy back into camp. Marc's team is taken to the infirmary.

### **January 26<sup>th</sup>**

-Daryl admits he was in contact with Adrian. Pam agrees to share her magic with Shawn to keep him safe. Darren breaks up with Megan because she won't resign from the Eagles. Jennifer makes a deal with Francesca to keep her from pressing charges against Kimmie for cutting off her hair. Kenn drops the charges against Tim because Tim protected Tonya and the baby, but he refuses to drop the petition to remove the right to privacy. Many of the clearing team members are now immune to most magical healing. Charlie is able to help them, including with Marc's impaled ankle, but not the broken bones. They see a picture of Luke. He could be Marc's older twin. Angela finds the antler piece that Dog stole from Nature.

-Angela uses Marc's seer magic this time and gets an answer she needs. She becomes a Blinker. Ivan brings Tonya a gift and begs her to remove the curse on him. She does. She refuses to remove the curse she put on Adrian. Brittani's parents accept Daryl, but they both still think the relationship is a mistake. The clearing team meets in a dark hallway and tries

to help each other through the horror of what they've just survived. Angela and the other women see it and leave them alone. Angela starts thinking about fate as an entity they can bargain with, like Nature. Jonny is removed from the Eagles. Quite a few people resign. Ray proposes to Grant. Tim christens Tonya's son, but Kenn refuses to be there for it. Tracy is now terrified of Angela and all magic users.

### **January 27<sup>th</sup>**

-Safe Haven is enjoying a day on the island with good food and good company. Kenn tells Dog they might be able to find him a mate on a different island or on a supply run. Adrian is watching from the top of the hill. Sadie finally digs herself out of the bunker and claims Adrian. They have sex right there, multiple times. Kendle's evil side tempts Adrian. He tells her the plan would have to be perfect.

# Book 16 Recap

## January 27<sup>th</sup>

-Joey is not fitting in at all. People are scared of him because of who his father was. Even Tobias backs down from the little boy. Ian warns Angela that Joey will be worse than Matt if he snaps. Ian makes plans to claim Bernice even though she already told him no. Gabe does the same thing with Tonya. He harasses her and tries to kiss her. Tonya's gifts unlock. Her witch fries Gabe, literally. Kenn sees it all and realizes Tonya has her own power now. She doesn't need him anymore. Tobias tells his wives to get close to Tonya. It's his way of getting information about her. He now wants her instead of Tracy. Tracy shows more signs of snapping. Little Joey tricks the horse into talking to him.

-Angela gets upset with Ivan, Kenn, and Marc for refusing to give her information she needs. She gets it from Sadie, who shows a quick mind and compassion. Angela wants to save some of the UN fighters that are coming and add them to the camp. Angela tells Sadie to come by the ship later. Angela takes a tour of the island. She has a vision of them building upward in the reduced space. She unlocks Greg and tests him to see if he's worthy to be gifted with some of her power.

-Marc and his team listen to Adrian's group through spying devices the Eagles have placed around the island. They decide they need to pick a few people who can be trained to contact the Weigh Station so Angela isn't as big of a target and so they don't lose that ability if she dies. They hear Quinn and Kendle conspiring, but not enough to arrest them. Biff tells Marc to be careful, that Quinn isn't just a hothead. He's dangerous. Marc tells Greg he'll approve the power sharing as long as he's not single. Greg goes to Lisa, against his will. Angela is filling out her breeding tree.

-Kenn tries to talk Charlie out of marrying Tracy. Brittani and Trinity have another snarky moment where Trinity's hatred grows another level. The kids have a fight. Cate slaps Amy over Joey. Angela sees signs that Cate has been charmed. Ian is thinking about challenging Angela over the Eagle rule about rookies not being told how rough the job really is. Kendle and Ian see a small boat approaching the beach. She refuses to warn anyone. She sees five people in it. Ian warns everyone. Furious at having their peace disturbed, Marc fires on the boat and kills the four people in it. Kendle knows one of them dove out and survived, but she doesn't tell anyone.

-The wedding starts. Tracy stops it and says she wants an abortion or she'll take her own life. She refuses to go back onto the ship. She says she's going home. She goes to the changing tent they put

up on the dock. Ralph and Daisey get married. Ivan tells Angela he'll find a way to save her grandchild. Angela says she'd be very grateful. Shawn and Greg pass out the hated brown envelopes to the people Angela wants fighting in the next battle. Charlie tells Adrian to charm Tracy and save the baby or he'll vote against Adrian in everything and even get Conner banished.

-Darren sees the envelopes in female hands and starts shouting. Megan tries to calm him down. Kenn and Tonya talk about her new power. Kenn admits he was scared of her leaving him. Adrian tells Darren he thinks the names Megan and Hannah are cursed. Quinn stirs Darren back up and plants the idea to remove Angela so there won't be female Eagles anymore. Sadie comes to the ship for her meeting with Angela. She's evaluated as an Eagle. Sadie bonds with Kimmie. Angela sends Joey to Adrian's camp, via Sadie. They are attacked by a pirate on the way. Ivan kills him. Adrian sees that Joey is a byzan child.

-Kenn talks to Angela about Gabe's death. He's worried Tonya will be charged with murder. Angela tells him to take Tonya away from here if that happens. Tim is given a loving correction from the Eagles for not telling anyone about Courtney's confession. Jonny hits on Grant again in front of Ray. Grant punches him this time. The right to privacy is voted on and removed. The Eagles tell



Angela that Tim has already been corrected, so he can't be punished twice.

-Angela gathers Greg, Shawn, and a few witnesses for the power share. Greg finds out Shawn wasn't tested at all. Darren knocks. When Marc opens the door, Darren stabs him with a sedative. He has Autumn in his other hand. Angela, Greg, and Shawn travel to a mental location where each man picks the demon they'll host and some of the skills that will come with it. Darren trims Greg and Shawn, demanding everyone get out. He only wants to kill Angela. Pam agrees to leave. Jennifer grabs her baby. Darren shoots her in the shoulder. He fires at the guards in the hall, hitting Jonny. Jeff saves Jonny. Megan acts like she's on Darren's side and then blows his brains out. It's during this chaos that Ivan kidnaps Tracy and takes her away from Pitcairn Island in a lifeboat from one of the pirate ships.

-Jennifer snaps and tells everyone she's only been pretending to be Angela's heir. Megan slips in Darren's blood and falls, hitting her neck and head. She dies right next to Darren. Missy finds out Pam left Shawn in there with Darren and flips out, removing her from their family. She also sends Morgan away. All he thought about was Jennifer, not even sparing a thought for Shawn. Jennifer says she wants to leave Safe Haven. Tonya gets a sample of Darren's blood. He had the rage illness. They find

out the UN has a nuclear submarine in the fleet that's coming for them. They decide to steal it.

-Marc tells Adrian his clock has started ticking. He has two weeks left to live. He settles his affairs, leaving Angela and the kids to Adrian because Adrian is the only one who might be able to keep them alive and because Angela doesn't want any of the other dogs sniffing at her heels. Charlie finds out Tracy is missing. Marc says she's with Adrian, to leave her alone. Another group of normals and rookie Eagles leave in a lifeboat. They find the note Ivan left. He's gone too. Marc tells Greg the truth about Ivan and Tracy. Shawn officially breaks up with Pam and Morgan. Morgan also ends things with Pam.

-Kyle tells Morgan they're leaving Safe Haven and he wants Morgan to come along. He says no. Kyle tells Jennifer he won't take her away from here unless she convinces Morgan to come. She and Morgan talk about immortality. He confirms they're compatible. Jennifer invites him to stay with them. Morgan does, unable to resist the chance to be a part of Kyle and Jennifer's family. Angela gets Marc to Blink for an answer to the puzzle of human creation. They have to face the Demon of Time at some point and get answers there. Marc and Angela get married with no interruptions this time. Angela is pregnant.

**February 13<sup>th</sup>**

-The UN convoy reaches the atolls near Pitcairn Island. Cerise, an Australia hunter and double agent, charms the captain of the submarine so he doesn't eat anyone. The fighters are called to the command ship for a meeting about the invasion. Cerise's XO, Goldie, is ordered to kill her by the UN Director. A tracker tries to kill her before the invasion even starts. The invasion begins. Booby traps and recordings keep the UN troops moving through a gauntlet designed to kill them. Videos try to get the troops to turn on the UN for a place in Safe Haven. Kyle and a few of the Eagles join Cerise's troops and blend in. They clear the first two atolls and meet up with the other fighters on Henderson Island.

-Kendle arrives without warning and tells Marc he has to come back to Pitcairn and help her save Quinn. He goes with her, knowing she's lying. Greg and Biff take their prisoner toward Pitcairn Island. They are captured by captain Miles and taken into the submarine. Cerise calls it a night and sets up a base camp on Henderson. Little Joey tells Adrian that Quinn and Kendle are missing. Quinn sets up his blind in the small shed on the runway.

-Safe Haven's people are in the tunnels under town. Charlie can't stand not knowing if Tracy is safe with Adrian's group. He goes topside against orders. Tommy is restless again and missing Kendle. Angela tells Conner he isn't allowed to leave the island, ever. Conner says he doesn't want to leave,

ever. Not even for the final battle. Angela finds out Marc's clock stopped. Cate says Joey is in her head. He's going to kill Marc. Angela goes looking for them, taking Stanley along.

-On the sub, Miles interrogates Greg and Biff. He decides to eat them. Big fight where their prisoner of war helps the two men and then Greg kills Miles with a hybrid death spell. They take over the submarine but can't sail it because the bridge crew fled in a RIB when Miles snapped. A crew member, Saul, sails it for them.

-Cerise's basecamp begins the nightly fighting. Some of the undercover Eagles join in. Then Kyle tells Cerise who they are. They charm some of the troops and kill some of them. Jacob shows up. He is Kyle's brother. Kyle quickly kills him. Cerise snaps, proving her nickname of the Bloody Dog is well earned. She slaughters most of the troops by herself. The Eagles escort Cerise and Goldie to the cruise ship.

### **February 14<sup>th</sup>**

-Quinn calls on the radio saying he shot Angela, luring Marc in. Kendle pulls a gun on Marc and makes him pick between life without Angela or death with Kendle where they take over the Weigh Station together. Marc holds her under the water until she drowns.

-Stanley is protecting Angela. She wakes up to discover she was shot. She doesn't know who she is. Charlie reaches Adrian and finds out Tracy was never with Adrian's group. He tries to call the UN to make a deal for her release, assuming she was captured. Adrian puts his shield over Charlie. Marc sees it and assumes Adrian is in on the conspiracy. He almost kills him. Then Quinn calls, taunting them all about shooting Angela. Joey helps Quinn target Marc.

-Quinn shoots the fifth person from the RIB that Marc fired on, thinking it's Marc. Marc runs into the shed and Quinn dies an ugly death. As they try to help Angela, Joey attacks Marc and almost sends him off the edge of the cliff. Marc banishes Joey to Hell in place of his father. Kenn helps Marc when he considers throwing himself off the cliff.

-They get Angela onto the stretcher. Trinity almost falls off the cliff. Brittani saves her. Trinity can't take the humiliation. She tries to shove Brittani off the cliff. Chad saves Brittani and shoves Trinity, killing her instead. The remaining UN troops and ships head for Pitcairn. They know where Safe Haven is now, thanks to Quinn's radio calls. The charm Joey put on Cate snapped when he died. Panaji and Sadie have a spark. Harry's gifts unlock. He helps Angela remember who she is. Marc tells Charlie that Tracy left weeks ago and he promised her they'd leave her alone.

-Greg and the new sub captain, Saul, start blowing up the UN ships. The Director survives and is picked up by one of his patrol boats. He heads to Pitcairn with everyone else. Kyle's group makes it to the cruise ship. Grant sails them toward Pitcairn while Jennifer interrogates Cerise. Marc blames Angela for Kendle's death. It was supposed to be Adrian, too, but Adrian fed him information about Kendle and didn't conspire with her. Adrian went good. Kendle didn't.

-On the cruise ship, Cerise tells Jennifer the UN has the kids they need for a reset. They'll do it as soon as they find out they've lost this battle. Jennifer realizes she'll have to go through all of it again, including her time with Cesar. She breaks, deciding if she's powerful enough she can use her enforcer gifts to protect their little island from the reset. She joins the battle topside and starts sucking down lifeforces. Kyle finds her in a pile of bodies. He gets to see her evolve into a byzan. While that's happening, Cerise gets free and heads for Pitcairn Island to reach Angela, which has been her only real goal all along.

-Cerise tracks Angela to the tunnels. Angela comes up to talk. The UN director comes out of hiding, shooting. He hits Candy. Cerise kills him. Conner saves Candy's life. Angela sends Marc and the other men to clear the few troops still on the island. They

figure out Marc cheated on Angela with Kendle. Tommy finds out Marc killed Kendle. He shoots at Marc. Adrian takes the bullet while Kenn kills Tommy.

### **February 15<sup>th</sup>**

-Greg tells Saul to get ready to sink the submarine. Marc wants to keep it. Angela does not. Cerise begs Angela to help her free her country of the UN. Goldie finds out his wife died and their kids aren't doing well. Angela says Cody will take over Safe Haven after her. Ian resigns from the Eagles. So does Debra. They become a couple. Shawn tells Marc that Missy will be his wife in 10 years. He volunteers to go with Marc. Angela and Jennifer evaluate the new people to join them. Three dozen make it through, including Rico.

### **February 16<sup>th</sup>**

-Angela tells the camp about Cerise and her country needing their help. Marc volunteers to lead that run. Marc gets drunk. Charlie tries to guilt him into staying. Angela makes Marc admit he had an affair to clear his guilt. He says he wants the reset. Angela tells Adrian she's thinking about taking over the entire world and that he'll be the one to guide her through it if she becomes evil.

-Ivan and Tracy are on Henderson Island. He's holding her prisoner there until she delivers the baby.

# Book 17 Recap

This book takes place on Pitcairn Island and in the surrounding ocean.

## **February 16<sup>th</sup>**

-Marc convinces Greg not to sink the submarine. It angers Angela so much that she tells Greg to go on the run with Marc. Angela tells Kenn she needs him to get Marc to trust her because no one else can do it. Kenn has a brief moment where he misses being the old Kenny. Angela tells Tonya to start making plans to leave in case the camp finds out the truth about Gabe's death.

## **February 18<sup>th</sup>**

-The 11-man mission team leaves, heading for Australia in the submarine with Cerise and Goldie. It is Marc, Kenn, Greg, Shawn, Gus, Harry, Biff, and four unnamed rookies.

## **March 11<sup>th</sup>**

-The mission team has now been gone for three weeks without any contact. Some of the senior Eagles start plotting to put Angela and Adrian together. They're furious with Marc for leaving his pregnant wife. Adrian starts training their rookies. Ed resigns as Angela's right hand. This is where Ed



joins the church group as a spy. Safe Haven has 251 people.

-Theo outfitted their smallest ship with a whale spear. They're also fishing, but Angela is worried about having enough food to feed everyone. The tunnels are being outfitted for them to live in. Bunkhouses are being built. A dock is halfway finished. Amy and Kimmie sneak off the ship to go exploring and are caught.

-Grant is immune to most spells and charms. He's doing well as a rookie. Angela makes him the team leader. Ed tells Adrian that Angela is in danger. Ed is Invisible. Jennifer is still doing light work while her shoulder heals. She's trying to decide about leaving, but she doesn't want to give up the job. She's just scared. Monica leaves her post for private time. Pam tries to talk to Morgan; he ignores her. William calls on the radio, sounding even more deranged than before. Brittani is hiding her bad health from everyone. People think she's upset about Trinity's death. Allison, thrilled that her cancer is in remission, starts considering ways to feel that good forever.

-Charlie is messy and rude, not doing well with Tracy's whereabouts being unknown. He wants to leave and go search for her. Timmy is using food to comfort himself about Cathy's betrayal. He's gaining weight fast. Zack puts Timmy on a diet.

Daryl finds out Brittani is pregnant with triplets. Monica has been earning FND credits. Angela sees a ghost in the clinic.

-Kyle and Angela talk about the scrolls for immortality. She refuses to let them consume corpses to live longer or to tell anyone that it's possible. None of them can hold the time stream to look ahead right now. Samantha's twins hate being on land. They're water babies. Angela uses herself as bait. Adrian kills two trackers left over from their UN battle. Angela connects to Saul, the captain of the submarine, and promises him a place in Safe Haven if he sinks it. Adrian tells her the people she's never used her alpha power on are her frontline fighters in the final battle with Nature.

-Some of their people seem to be immune to the rage illness. Adrian begs Angela to take him along when she leaves to go find the mission men. Angela gives Adrian the job of finding the rage illness cure while they're at the lab. Morgan is still living with Kyle and Jennifer. Ray has been training and is a good sailor. Daryl refuses to let normals around Brittani, angering Ralph. Terry and Jayda have a spark. Tim is now the full-time preacher. Pam's plan to get Daisey's help isn't working. Morgan, Missy, and Shawn don't want anything to do with her. She's becoming an outcast in camp and she's drinking a lot.

-Rico is doing duty over the infirmary and watching Tonya. Adrian and Angela share a vision of Alexa arriving and a resulting gunfight that wipes out most of the fighters on both sides. Angela releases the ants onto the island while also testing to see if any living thing is now protected here. Adrian still wants a child of his own to raise and a happy family.

-Angela tells Tonya to draw up plans for a run back to America for supplies, but she can't go along if she doesn't start training for it. Ralph talks to Angela about problems with the normals being treated differently than the magic users. Chad is rude to Stanley. Stanley punches him. Neil runs a test to see if byzan really repel and have to be kept separate. Nothing happens. Tobias punches Adrian.

-Conner admits to Adrian that he doesn't really want to get married. Adrian tells him he saw Candy's death. Wade is byzan now. Angela, Tonya, and Samantha hold private training sessions and refuse to tell anyone what they're working on. Daryl and Brittani's parents want her to have an abortion because she's not going to survive having triplets.

-Tobias is cleared to start working with the medics. Sadie tells Adrian she's on the pill. Tim gave her birth control, without permission from the medics. Four UN rookies try to beat up Neil. Amy handles it for him. The Eagles keep stirring Angela up over Adrian. Ralph talks to Wade about the normals and

about crossing Angela over them. The normals are waking up from the charm Angela put on them while they were on the ship. Angela puts Jennifer in charge for the first time since the shooting. She asks Jennifer if she's staying. Jennifer says yes. Theo sees Monica and Charlie having sex. Charlie makes Monica promise she'll tell Molly. Pam kisses Stanley. Tonya is now gathering and hiding supplies in case she has to run.

-Wade holds the second relief source lesson. Conner confronts Charlie about his affair with Monica. Charlie is furious that Angela hasn't already left to find Marc. Angela sneaks off to have a gun lesson with Adrian. Her gun hand has nerve damage. Adrian sees she isn't caring for herself like she should be. Angela tricks Adrian into telling her it's possible to go back to being a normal. The Eagles tell Adrian they won't go back for the final battle unless he leads them. Jennifer finds Kyle's will on Angela's desk. He's byzantine and cracking. He plans to leave to keep them all safe. Angela tells Adrian she's going to take over the world and rule the normals, to make his choice about it. She's decided the magic users are not going to die for them.

### **March 12<sup>th</sup>**

-Monica refuses to tell Molly she's also sleeping with Charlie. Pam overdoses on alcohol. Morgan refuses to go talk to her. Angela figures out what Monica is hiding. Rico is acting like a rookie. A time

push starts and cuts off abruptly. This is where Gus kills Valerie in the lab and Safe Haven feels it. They tell the normals it was a tremor. Grant has a hangover from celebrating being made rookie team leader. Chad says he's applejacked, revealing his Navy background. The Eagles notice Angela and Jennifer both dislike Chad.

-Marc's twins guard Angela while practicing old fighting forms and torturing Adrian. Dog helps them by farting in Adrian's face. Jeff and Daryl are sent to remove the UN rookies who refuse to follow the rules. Ralph stops them. Jennifer tells him he just challenged the boss, openly. She asks if he's trying to save the normals so there will be enough fighters on his side in that war. Terry wants to be a descendant.

### **March 13<sup>th</sup>**

-Cate starts bonding with Adrian. Samantha notices some of the baby's clothes are missing. Amy can't find her dolls. Neil asks if Samantha is ready to fully bring Wade into their lives. Jeff and Daryl remove the rookies who won't follow the rules. Jennifer helps Tim figure out how to get Angela to agree to let him build a church. She tells him if he screws up again he'll be executed. Wade, Neil, and Samantha make love. Panaji has another spark with Sadie.

-Safe Haven has their first dinner on land in town. Trent reveals Monica's affair with Charlie. Ian tells

them he's leaving and that Debra and Ed are coming along. Theo also says he's leaving soon. Angela stirs people up about the missing mission men. A few of the descendants hold a quick meeting about the time push.

-Adrian holds a grief counseling session. Molly finds out about Monica and Charlie. She tosses Monica off the ship. Molly's gifts unlock. All magic users have to be linked into the hive now so the enforcer can monitor them. Charlie tries to get the Eagles to force Angela to go after Marc. They figure out they have another lurker in camp. Jennifer starts hunting for them. They smell smoke on the ship.

-The ship is on fire. A new explosion injures a dozen people, including Angela and Morgan. The first dream walking moment happens here between those who were injured and the mission men. Greg is being tortured.

### **March 14<sup>th</sup>**

-Lisa wakes up screaming. They find out burns, like bones, are another limit of magic healing. Conner, Cody, and others are trying to heal the people who were injured in the explosion. Theo is investigating the cause. The normals and the magic users are all upset again and blaming each other. They're all talking about magic laws being put into place. All of the injured people are now dreaming about the mission men being tortured. We see Harry trying to

save the four rookies who were taken along. They are burned alive.

-Terry takes over most of the medical duties while Morgan is recovering. Missy is sedated. She won't stop screaming for Shawn. Chad acts like he's weak to keep people from finding out who he was before the war. Rico guards Tonya.

-Daryl gets hurt and connects to the mission team. They figure out pain can help them make long-distance connections. Some of the Eagles make Jennifer promise to make Angela go after the mission men as soon as she recovers. Adrian agrees to Morgan's deal as long as they can get Neil's support. Sherman is gathering information on how to trap a descendant using magic bonds. Charlie's magic works wonders on Angela's injuries. Tobias starts bonding with Charlie for his own gain. Tobias and his wives help with the patients. He tells Charlie he's wasted as a guard, that he should be a medic. Charlie decides to try it.

-Angela wakes up from a nightmare of Marc. Charlie tries to physically force Angela to go after Marc, like the old Kenny. She helps Theo track down the cause of the fire. It was an overheating issue with the wires. It was Theo's mistake. Allison corners Samantha and demands to know how to reach another level. She's terrified of dying and starting to hunt power because of it. She thinks

Angela is immortal now. Molly wants to be connected to the hive so she can convince everyone to banish Monica for the affair. Ralph and Sherman confront Jennifer about the normals being treated differently. She uses a charm to settle them down.

### **March 15<sup>th</sup>**

-Brittani's parents try to convince her to abort. She's having a lot of trouble now. She starts bleeding and is rushed to the infirmary. Tonya tells Jennifer that Morgan has been charmed. He thinks he's still in a relationship with Pam. Jennifer leaves him that way. Morgan knows. He says he forgives her. He's letting her go. Tonya reports it all. Angela tells Jennifer to do her job and make Pam unlock him and spend a month in jail or she'll enact the magic laws for everyone.

-Jayda is cleared to leave the infirmary. They find her kit is full of fire extinguishers and make her stay. She's terrified of fire and not recovering mentally. Charlie talks to her and helps her. Jayda tells them one of the mission team men died. More nightmares send screams through the camp. Angela and Tim talk about the flaws in the theory of creation and how it might have really happened. She agrees to let him build a small church as long as he never breaks the camp rules or goes against her. If he does, he'll be hanged. Chad gets the horse to leave the ship, showing another sign of who he is. Jennifer tells



Angela they need to go get the mission men. Angela refuses once again.

### **March 20<sup>th</sup>**

-Angela holds a lesson in the swimming pool to teach them to move through a time slow. Samantha does amazingly well at it. Rico sees Tonya hiding kits in closets. Neil and Wade resume working on the complete list of all camp members and what gifts they have. Neil has a good moment with Angela. He asks when they're going to get the missing men. She tells him a secret: The submarine is right next to the cruise ship, just under the water. No one noticed it.

-Cody kills a UN straggler who tries to shoot Angela. Angela gets Cody to confirm that if they didn't have free will, the violence would stop. She tells Adrian he has until dawn to make his choice and join her in her decision to rule the world and the normals.

-Kyle and Neil argue. Neil uses his gifts against Kyle, shocking them both. Jennifer punishes Neil. She's the enforcer. They think Neil has the rage illness. He doesn't. Angela forces Jennifer to do the right thing. She zaps Pam for charming Morgan and makes her lift it. Pam admits she charmed Morgan, Courtney, and Kendle. Pam goes into the brig for a month. Morgan was faking. He and Shawn had Missy charm him before Shawn left because they

were expecting Pam to do something like this. Morgan was trying to give Jennifer peace and find out if he could forgive Pam enough to still be with her. Ralph and Sherman see it all. They talk about forcing one of the descendants to stay with them while making all of the others leave. They want the island for normals and the magic users to be gone.

-Tonya starts feeling safer when she sees Rico guarding her. Tobias is jealous. Jayda and Terry have another spark. Jennifer keeps hunting for the lurker. Neil and Wade get through a lot more of the names list. Samantha has a nightmare about not trusting time. A group of brawlers in the mess are knocked out by Eagles.

-The first matchup party happens on the island. The descendants are allowed to show themselves and be themselves openly for the first time. Molly tries to kill Monica in their matchup. The Eagles remove several child predators. Cody's eyes light up blue instead of red, declaring him different. Amy beats him up for using his gifts to get her to obey the rules. Jonny tries to rape Grant and is killed by Angela. It breaks Jeff because he was friends with Jonny.

-Daryl challenges Kyle, blaming him for a lot of the things that have gone wrong, including the death of a teammate. Daryl is collapsing under the stress of knowing Brittani may die. Conner challenges Neil and won't tell him why until the match is over.

Conner has an amazing fog gift. He hates Neil because Neil abandoned Adrian. Angela mentally adopts Conner in that moment. Neil, Kyle, and Adrian bond again, settling some of the old bitterness. The brawlers are on guard duty. Neil admits he hates Adrian because of Becky. If Adrian had shut it down and punished Neil, Rick might not have taken her. The camp members are also having nightmares about the missing men now.

-Daisey tells Jennifer that Ralph is upset with the boss. Jennifer leaves Chad on guard duty over Samantha and her babies in the garden area. Charlie tells Jennifer that Allison might be the lurker. They go talk to her. Rico is caught by Chad as he looks in the closet where Tonya has been storing emergency kits. Samantha is kidnapped. Cody and Cate are making charmed pictures again.

### **March 21<sup>st</sup>**

-Grant wakes up and finds out what happened to Jonny and that he was drugged. Jeff, Kimmie, and Monica leave Safe Haven. Adrian tells Angela he'll support her on ruling the world even though he doesn't want to. Ralph and Sherman are caught conspiring by Daisey. Ralph admits to being on the law council, which gets him removed from it. He wasn't allowed to tell anyone. The guards say Chad and Rico are missing. Wade figures out who Chad is. Rico staggers to the bridge, bloodied, and tells them Chad took Samantha.

-Samantha is on a boat with Chad, about 35 miles from Pitcairn Island. She thinks Chad has her twins and agrees to his magic bonds. He rips out her hair by hand. Then he hurts her.

-In safe Haven, Rico and Grant figure out Chad was Navy. They check the ships in the cove and see one is missing. They hear ticking noises from bags in the closets. Tonya is blamed. Everyone thinks it's explosives. They evac the ship and start clearing it. They find Samantha's twins. Chad has the lifelike dolls, not the babies. He lied to Samantha to trick her into agreeing to the magic bonds. Neil and Wade get a rescue ship ready. Jennifer gets the camp under control. She has the brawlers lock Tonya in the jail on the island so she'll be safe.

-Angela talks to Rico. He's upset that she had the UN rookies removed. Because he is learning to care for others, she doesn't connect him to the hive yet and lets him keep doing duty over Tonya. Candy goes into labor, slowing the rescue party. Candy's daughters are born. Candy has a stroke. They find out she has cancer eating away one of her breasts. Terry is promoted to the top medical officer. Angela offers to help Tonya leave now because the camp is going to find out about Gabe. Tonya refuses. She wants to fight for the life she's built.

-Sherman joins the rescue team and tries to trick them into letting him claim Samantha with a magic bond to get her away from Chad. He is removed. They figure out Samantha won't be freed just from Chad's death. Angela decides to use Grant, who can be trusted to let her go.

-Adrian and Theo get the cruise ship cleared. They find out the ticking noises were alarm clocks. They were fakes to buy Chad time to get away. Amy and Cate become friends. We see Mike's abusive nature against Leeann for the first time. His older brother, Eric, covers for him.

-The rescue team reaches Chad. Chad forces Samantha to fire on them. Angela fakes being hit. Chad tosses the lifelike dolls overboard. Samantha fires on him, knowing the magic will rebound and knock her into the water. It does. She dives deep, looking for her babies while her mind keeps cracking. Kyle uses his new gift to freeze Chad in place.

-They pull Samantha out of the water where she is still searching for her sons. She doesn't believe them about the babies being in camp. She is sedated. Grant claims ownership of her to break Chad's hold. Neil disembowels Chad with bullets. Angela leaves that small ship there for Jeff and Kimmie, who she spotted in a lifeboat on their way here. Angela tells Grant to clear it with Ray and then she'll share gifts

with him. On the way home, Samantha tries to jump into the ocean because she thinks she sees the babies.

-Samantha wakes up. They give her the babies, but they don't free her yet. Her mind is very messed up. She tells them everything Chad said, including how he framed Tonya. Tonya is let out of the jail, along with Ralph, who confessed to stirring up the normals and conspiring with Sherman. Instead of Wade's anger at Angela, Neil hugs her, grateful that she got Samantha back alive and Wade didn't die. He wasn't sure if it was all a punishment for him over Becky and Seth's murders. Tim and Ralph become closer. The brawlers are assigned as the first island police force. Rico and Tonya share a bonding moment. She tells Tobias to leave her alone. Morgan starts dating Hannah. Jennifer is jealous. Dog gets drunk over missing Marc. Adrian takes care of him.

### **March 22<sup>nd</sup>**

-Angela tells the camp she's going to rescue their missing men. They cheer, finally upset enough to be okay with her being away from camp for it. Angela makes leadership a five-way deal between Jennifer, Morgan, Daryl, Neil, and Tonya. Neil demands to unlock all of the Invisibles so this can never happen again. Jennifer helps Samantha regain control over most of her mind. Kyle and Daryl make peace. Ray says he has to leave and go help Kenn. He and Grant

argue. Adrian tells Panaji it's okay for him to get close to Sadie.

-Tobias tries to get Charlie to speak against Kenn when they come back, so Kenn will be removed and then he can have Tonya. Angela has Saul bring up the submarine. The rescue team loads up. Terry kisses Jayda goodbye, declaring his intentions. Wade agrees to call Amy every day with updates.

-Angela reaches out to Marc, letting him know they're on the way. Marc tells her not to come. Angela swears to end the UN once and for all this time. She won't come back until she meets that goal.

# Book 18 Recap

This book starts back when the mission team was captured, showing what happened to them.

## **February 26<sup>th</sup>**

-The mission team is captured as they land in Australia. Greg is injured and loses his eye. Marc and Cerise depart the submarine and head to her homestead for a map of the lab where the mission team has been taken. Saul heads north in the sub to hide.

-A mile away from the beach, Reicher is running an experimental lab. Reicher, the boss, has cancer. He is dying. He and Joseph, his assistant, evaluate the mission men as they are brought in and taken to cages on the warehouse floor. Gus has the rage illness.

-Marc talks to Reicher through a monitor at Cerise's house. He refuses the deal to take over running the lab. Joseph realizes he isn't going to be given that position when Reicher dies. Cerise darts Marc and they all head to the lab in the UN transport that Reicher sends. As they leave, a group of refugees come out of the nearby graveyard. It's the Australian Resistance Force, or A.R.F.



-Joseph walks through the lab to get to his daily habit of masturbating while watching women being tortured. Joseph is a virgin and an incel. He hates women. His biggest wish is to mate one while killing her. We see the medics, Isabel and Sasha, who are also twin breeders for the lab. One of them is pregnant. The food they're served is made from corpses. It keeps them young enough to keep breeding the twins Reicher needs for his experiments.

-Reicher interrogates Cerise and Goldie. Goldie is sent to help his twins while being warned that he will be punished later for failing to kill Cerise during the UN invasion of the atolls. We find out Reicher has a spy in Safe Haven. Cerise is put back into the birthing wing. Reicher promises she'll have her kids back when they do the time reset. Cerise tells Reicher his brother, Rico, is in Safe Haven. Reicher mates with her.

### **March 3<sup>rd</sup>**

-Marc wakes up in an isolation room after being knocked out for days. He and Reicher talk again by monitor. Marc starts memorizing routines and trying to find Reicher's weaknesses.

-Greg is taken to the medical wing. The medics remove his ruined eyeball and two of his toes from the fight at the beach. He developed gangrene in them. He is interrogated while they work. He is

sedated and taken back to the cage on the warehouse floor.

### **March 8<sup>th</sup>**

-Marc is being forced to watch his men suffer. He is still in isolation. Harry is fed while the rookies are burned. It gives Harry an extreme hatred for the woman running the warehouse floor. He has an evolution, but he can't save the rookies. He is taken to the medical wing. Joseph starts plotting to get Reicher's job. Goldie almost begs Cerise to help him escape with his kids. Cerise acts differently in front of the medics. Her time in Safe Haven has started to change her. Sasha, the medic, goes looking for Joseph to report it. She finds him doing his daily thing. She reports the oddness and then helps him get off. Joseph hurts himself instead of her so he isn't removed. She recommends he enter the breeding program. Reicher is watching all of it.

-Harry wakes up in the medical bay. He sees the charred bodies of the rookies and flips out. He shoves Isabel, causing her to hit her stomach and go into labor early. A hound is sent in. It bites off Harry's thumb and two of his fingers. He is sedated, cauterized, and taken back to his cage.

### **March 10<sup>th</sup>**

-Shawn is injured by a hound and taken to the medical bay. He is interrogated and then castrated. Reicher and Marc have their nightly conversation

through the monitor. Marc finds more weaknesses, like Reicher's denial of the holocaust and his hatred of women, but he also reveals several of his own, like wanting to die because he has killed women. Marc again refuses to take over the lab. He is knocked out and taken to the warehouse floor.

-Sasha visits Isabel. The babies are okay, but Isabel has internal bleeding their magic users can't heal. Isabel doesn't want to give up the babies now. It's the first time she's ever had to be around them or care for them. That bond is already changing her.

### **March 14<sup>th</sup>**

-Marc and others are being tortured. He knocks himself out to keep from giving in. The torture keeps going. Biff can't take it. He intentionally lets a hound bite a chunk out of his hand so he can be taken to the medical bay. Biff is interrogated. Sasha is now scared of all the new subjects. Biff sees guards going by the medical bay with Greg, who is in rough shape. Biff acts weak to trick his guard into getting close. He grabs the knife from the man's belt and kills him. He throws the knife and hits Sasha in the shoulder and then takes off down the hallway after Greg. Cerise sees him and they fight. He almost beats her, even drugged and injured.

-Sasha confronts Reicher about the subjects hurting and killing them. She demands help for her sister or she won't do her job anymore. Reicher mates

Cerise. He's her breeding partner. Reicher tells Joseph relationships are forbidden. Joseph doesn't care because he's planning to kill Sasha. There won't be a relationship. Sasha cuffs Joseph and takes his virginity. At the moment of climax, he slams his head into her chin and breaks her nose.

### **March 21<sup>st</sup>**

-Reicher and his daughter, Thalia, test Theory Hk129. Subjects who hate each other can have stronger bonds than friends. Because Kenn and Marc were brothers-in-arms, they can't stand to watch each other be hurt. Reicher offers one of them a slot on the security crew if they'll torture their teammates. Gus breaks and does it. He quickly becomes obsessed with causing pain. Joseph makes plans to kill Marc so he can't take Reicher's place.

-Gus is taken to the medical bay. He discovers he hates Brittani for the way she ended things. Gus and Reicher talk. Gus has to pass two tests to become one of the lab staff. He has to hurt Biff for killing the security guard. Gus does it happily. He doesn't know Biff is awake the entire time. He just can't react because of the drugs. Gus also zaps Cerise. He hates her the most for bringing them here. Reicher allows it because she hasn't been punished yet for the theft of the submarine.

-Gus is taken to the time push room where they make a new attempt with Goldie's sickly babies,

while Goldie is forced to watch. Valerie, the pusher, starts controlling time. She fires a laughter spell at the Demon of Time when he tries to stop her. Gus is told to kill the kids. It's his second test. Gus kills Valerie instead and is taken to jail after being beaten into submission. Cerise cuts off the head of the pusher even though she's dead, because she tries to come back. Reicher orders the subjects moved to the next stage and the next level. The warehouse floor is shut down. We see that the lab is underwater.

### **March 24<sup>th</sup>**

-Kenn is in the medical bay, getting stitches. He is going to the session wing next as a scroll diver. Reicher comes in to talk to him about being Marc's XO when he takes over. As Marc is moved from the warehouse floor, he makes a weak attempt to kill Reicher. It lets him see the codes they use for the elevators. Reicher tells Thalia to release the hounds on the top floors and let them eat the normal staff members he no longer needs.

-Marc gets medical care. Sasha tells him she still wants to be a medic when he takes over. She treats him like he's the boss. He tells her to get out so he doesn't kill her. Joseph comes in and picks up a scalpel. Reicher never finds out what they talk about because Joseph disabled the camera. Marc promised to give Joseph control over the lab if he helps Marc kill Reicher.

-Isabel is bonding with her kids. She wants Sasha to help them escape. Sasha is trying to teach Joseph to control himself so he can be put into the breeding program. Sasha is sure Joseph will inherit control of the lab. She's forming connections with her new boss so she and her sister will be protected. They have another private moment where he doesn't hurt her. She offers to give him a vial of poison to finish Reicher off.

### **March 26<sup>th</sup>**

-Gus has his memory modified. Greg wakes up in the dimension hunting wing. He has his first session where Thalia wants him to access the dimension where he became a hybrid. She tries to torture him into an evolution. He finds out most hybrids die quickly because their demons take control.

### **March 28<sup>th</sup>**

-Harry wakes in the life and death wing. His first session consists of trying to save the lives of dying people with his gifts. He has no success until they shoot a child. He saves the boy and is sent back to his room. The other healers in his wing are jealous because he had an evolution already. Harry's next session is harder. They shoot him and he has to save his own life, something descendants can't do. He evolves again. Harry kills a guard on his way back to his room, with his teeth. He knows they want him to help Reicher. He'll never agree. Reicher plans to consume Harry.

### **March 30<sup>th</sup>**

-Shawn wakes up in the blinking wing. He does well in his session. Blinking is all mental and it keeps him from having to think about his own life and future now that he's been castrated. He doesn't want to stop. The other Blinkers hate Shawn. They don't want new competition. The blinkers are trying to find a way to open or close the gates between reality. Cerise sneaks into the radio room and contacts ARF. Joseph catches her. She threatens to tell Reicher that Joseph and Sasha are planning to poison him. Thalia and Reicher trace Cerise's call to her homestead. Reicher has now matched Thalia with Marc as his mate to keep him sane when he takes over the lab.

### **March 31<sup>st</sup>**

-Marc wakes up in the creation wing. In his first session, Marc is told to contact the Creator. Thalia looks away for a few seconds and Marc escapes into the elevator. They let him explore. Marc comes back on his own. They resume the session. Marc's fellow subjects want him gone even though he wasn't successful. One of them attacks him. In Marc's next session, Thalia threatens to use a nuclear warhead and blowup Pitcairn if he doesn't contact the Weigh Station. Marc does, telling Doug to never answer him or any of the Eagles again.

### **April 1<sup>st</sup>**

-Kenn has his first scroll diving session. He bonds with the other scroll divers. They're all military like him. Kenn kills a guard on the way back to his room and heads for Reicher. Thalia and Reicher are locked in. They call the enforcer kids to make Kenn go back to his room. Kenn refuses to hurt kids and obeys. Joseph is approved for the breeding program.

### **April 2<sup>nd</sup>**

- A tropical storm is approaching the lab and gaining strength. Biff is being tormented by the conjurers in the reality wing. He is terrified. He's a normal. He is tortured in his sessions until he can use his mind to protect himself. He conjures a stone warrior that slaughters the guards, but Biff starts flipping too fast. Cerise is sent to talk to him. He attacks her and manages to steal her knife. He kills the guards who turn their backs on his defender, rendering it harmless. Then he goes back to his wing and kills all of the other subjects who've been tormenting him.

### **April 4<sup>th</sup>**

-Greg reaches the dimension where Angela shared her gifts with him. He opens a door there and sees a nuclear explosion coming, but he can't tell where it happens. Harry is ordered to attend a new session. He refuses. They start hurting the other healers in his wing. Harry snaps and kills all of them so he can't be pressured that way anymore. He takes their lifeforces and evolves again. He is knocked out and



sent to the medical bay to determine how far back he has pushed the aging process with all of those lifeforces. Isabel is back to work in the medical bay. She's lost without her babies. She sees Harry and wants revenge. She injects him with poison. Isabel is arrested. Harry evolves yet again and pushes the poison out of every orifice. He can't be killed now. Reicher starts trying to copy that.

### **April 7<sup>th</sup>**

-Shawn is in a session. He's losing weight and not taking care of himself. All he cares about is blinking. The other Blinkers hate Shawn because of his progress. They attack him and stab him dozens of times. Harry saves Shawn, bringing him back from the dead. Reicher orders them to keep Shawn and Harry together now. Sasha goes to Reicher and makes a deal for her sister's life. She tells him about every traitor and bad thought she's seen and heard. Marion, Reicher's mother and head caretaker, tells Cerise her first pregnancy test is positive. She's carrying Reicher's evil offspring. Cerise is arrested for treason.

-Isabel is taken back to the medical bay. Reicher visits Cerise in jail. He tells her she'll be killed or she can marry him so he'll become the leader of the resistance force. She agrees to marry him and is let out to resume her duties. Isabel hears Goldie begging to save his kids and realizes they have the same goals. The storm has become a typhoon. It's

headed straight for the lab. Even in Australia, Nature is hunting Marc. They start securing the lab in preparation.

-Sasha gives Reicher a transfusion of Mitchel blood. She finds out he hates Mitchels because one of them stole the woman he loved and helped her escape. The woman, Tilly, looks like Cerise. Saul, still in the submarine, is in the north hiding when Angela contacts him mentally and charms him. He heads for Pitcairn Island. He also calls ARF and delivers a message.

-Under the graveyard in Australia, the resistance force fights off refugees, much like Safe Haven has been doing all along. They take a radio call from Saul that tells them reinforcements are on the way from Safe Haven.

### **April 9<sup>th</sup>**

-Harry and Shawn are called to the medical bay. Sasha and Isabel are there. Harry operates on Isabel and saves her, but she can't breed anymore. Sasha has her first official breeding session with Joseph. She asks what happens when breeders can't work anymore. Marion lies to keep her calm. All the valuable subjects are being relocated to the next floor of the lab. The rest are going to be gassed or left to starve. The storm is hitting. Thalia is overseeing the relocations.

-In Marc's wing, the other subjects riot when she only moves him. She has to fight to get him out. Marc helps her; she bonds with him like her father wants. She has the same gifts as Marc and Joseph. Many areas of the lab are now rioting. The blood transfusion allows Reicher the strength to go through and clear problems while saving a few of the staff that he needs. Joseph finds out he and Thalia are Reicher's kids.

### **April 11<sup>th</sup>**

-The subjects are all in the same wing now. Kenn accidentally connects to Tonya and finds out she's been arrested. He doesn't seem to care and closes the connection. He is trying to reach Tim to get him to come to the lab so he can bless the knives needed to close the gates between realms. Kenn finds a map scroll and stays down too long. He suffocates. Harry brings him back. Biff is knocked out when he attacks Cerise. Angela connects to Biff and tells him he can keep his defender in her camp. All he has to do is steal a map.

### **April 13<sup>th</sup>**

-Marc is woken for the final part of the conversion process. Thalia fights her attraction to him, very distracted. We find out the four rookies who were burned alive were future rapists. Marc is given a tour of his men. Greg says he doesn't want to leave. Shawn and Harry tell him they're staying. Biff tries to attack him. They go to the cafeteria where the

staff treats him like the boss. He spends time with Kenn where Kenn says he wants the reset so he can go back and redo his life with Angela.

-Sasha helps Isabel sneak in for a visit with her babies. Marion sees it and reports it. Isabel goes to the jail and drugs the guard. She helps Gus remember who he is. Marc has dinner with Reicher, who is protected by the time locked room. They talk about many things. He finally gets Marc to agree to take his place. Marc's prints and voice are recorded. He signs the paper. It's also a magical contract. It can't be broken.

-Marc tries to take charge right then, but he has no real power until Reicher is dead. Angela contacts him. Marc tells her not to come. Marc figures out Reicher really wants Angela and now there's not a chance that she won't come to save her mate. Reicher plans to do the reset and keep control while using Marc to force Angela to do anything else he wants. Marc is gassed and taken back to his room.

### **April 15<sup>th</sup>**

-The rescue team has made it to Australia. They are walking through the outback to Cerise's homestead. Wade copies Angela's new tracking gift. Dog is waiting on the submarine with Saul. ARF makes contact. Adrian's son, Gordon, is about to inherit leadership of the resistance force. Angela finds out Tilly, Gordon's mother, escaped from the lab. Tilly

asks if their group can join Safe Haven. Angela says she'll give that answer after the rescue. Wade worries over not being able to give Samantha more kids. He's sterile.

### **April 16<sup>th</sup>**

-The lab is being shut down again as Reicher's chosen few are once again relocated, this time to the very bottom floor. Sasha warns Kenn that all of his wing is going to be removed, including him. Isabel breaks Gus and Goldie out of jail. Gus runs off. Goldie sends Isabel to the breeding wing while he heads for the radio room to call for reinforcements. Gus stabs Cerise in the chest in front of Reicher and runs off again. Joseph tells Reicher the submarine just arrived. Joseph crosses a line. Reicher beats him and uses magic on him. He leaves him lying there, almost dead and without his gifts. Sasha enters the command room on the floor above them and accesses the top-secret files.

-Goldie fights the hounds to reach the radio. Safe Haven answers his call. They need him to open the top hatch. Goldie fights through the hounds again to make it to the top level. An alarm goes off. Reicher realizes Safe Haven is here now. He orders Thalia to get ready to do the reset. She's a pusher too. The subjects are brought to the time room with the kids in the lab, of all ages, to keep Angela from firing on them with the submarine. All of them have been seeing visions of her doing that.

-Biff manages to sneak off during the confusion. He finds Sasha locked in the command room and promises he'll help Isabel and her babies get out of here if Sasha gives him a copy of the map. She does it. Reicher sees it on the cameras and activates the gas to kill her. Sasha asks Biff to forgive her for everything she did to him. Biff gets an oxygen mask from the medical bay and brings out his stone warrior.

-Joseph is looking for Sasha in the breeder's wing. He finds Isabel and makes her come along. He decides she'll do in place of her sister and attacks her right there in the hallway. It's a vicious fight where Isabel does better than expected. Marion cuts Joseph's throat and saves Isabel. Her job is to protect the breeders, but her grandson's weaknesses are an embarrassment too. Reicher told her to remove Joseph weeks ago.

-Kenn and the other scroll divers manage to get out of their rooms and onto the elevator as the wing is being gassed. They come out on the top floor and find the rescue team there. They join forces and walk the top level, clearing madmen and hounds. Trent realizes he doesn't like this job anymore. Erin realizes she loves it. Theo is able to hear the ghosts on the warehouse floor, like Angela can. No one else does. They move to the next level and find Biff. He cries in Angela's arms.

-Adrian makes it to the laboratory. Gus is there. They find the vaccine for the rage illness and dose Gus. He attacks and they knock him out. Adrian gives mercy to a wing of young subjects nearby. He also takes several other vials from the lab. Thalia gets set for the time push. Marc tries to stop her. Reicher is forced to tell her they need three of the founding family bloodlines for it to work. They have Reicher and she's part Mitchel. They need to wait for Angela. Angela goes to where Reicher is locked in his command room instead of straight to Marc like everyone expected her to.

-Angela has Cody start using his magic on Reicher. Reicher calls for Thalia's help, but she's trapped by the mission men. Cate steps into view. Reicher sent her to Joel's lab so she didn't kill him. He's afraid of her. Cate and Cody open fire, trying to bring down Reicher's shield. Tilly steps into view. Reicher's shield falls. Angela locks his gifts. Cate starts torturing him. Thalia offers to trade the mission men for her father's life. Angela agrees. She sends Wade and a few others to escort them.

-Thalia lets Marc go. Angela orders the men to kill her. She lied. Marc captures Thalia, but he can't hurt women now. He shoves her to Harry, who strangles her and then snaps her neck in revenge for the torture and deaths of their four rookies. Angela orders the twins to kill Reicher. Cate and Cody do it

together while Biff and Tilly get to watch. The computer automatically switches leadership to Marc.

-Erin starts hacking the computer for information. Marc tells Wade and the others need to leave. Wade calls Angela down. Marc insists on doing the reset. He wants to go back to their childhood, so they never split up at all. She uses Cate and Cody to remind him that his twins will never exist. Angela tells the mission men some hard truths. She says they're going to a deserted location for a while to let them recover and then leaves them alone to make their own choices about coming.

-We find out Marc is scared of Nature. That's why he wanted to keep the submarine. He thinks they can kill her with a nuke. Adrian talks to the mission men and helps them see they're still needed. The rescued kids in the lab will need people around them who understand what they've gone through.

-Angela walks through the lab, deciding who can go with them. She only takes a couple dozen. Marion slaps Tilly. Isabel hears their argument and understands if they leave Marion alive she'll just restart it all. She kills Marion. Angela says now Isabel can go with them.

-Marc and the mission men come to Angela, telling her they're not leaving the kids behind even though



she told them the kids are evil. He says they're all going with her and that he loves her and he'll try to adjust. They clear out most of the supplies from the lab. As they leave, Marc orders the computer to lock the top door and not let anyone in or out.

-Saul sends RIBs from the submarine to pick them up. Angela tells Tilly no about going with them. She says reclaim your land and be ready to come help in the final battle against Nature. They split the supplies with Tilly's group. Tilly promises to gather up livestock and contact them.

-Then Angela tells Saul to fire. He sends a torpedo that blows up the lab, killing everyone left inside. Marc tries to protest, but his time in the lab has changed him forever. He gives in to Angela's plan to rule the world. We see that Gordon, Adrian's son, is already on board with that plan. The mission men see her resemblance to Reicher in that moment and take comfort in it.

-In the deleted scenes, we find out the Hawaii lab is still active and Alexa Mitchel is a subject there.

# Book 19 Recap

## April 16<sup>th</sup>

-The rescue team boards the submarine. Saul decides to stay with Tilly's group. Gordon charms him and locks his gifts so he can't take over the Australian group. Ray takes over as captain of the sub. Dog is held in the bridge because the mission men have a fear of all canines. Wade contacts Safe Haven and lets them know they've rescued the mission men.

-Harry sets up in the small medical bay on the submarine to give everyone a checkup. Shawn helps him. Angela tells them to only use magic if they have to. Adrian gives Marc his first therapy session. He gets Marc to admit he picked Kendle because she was easier to be with and he could be the leader with her. Adrian tells Marc all he has to do right now is figure out what will make him happy, nothing else. Marc agrees to try.

-They pick up an SOS call. Dog and Marc are reunited. Marc isn't afraid of Dog like he expected to be. Biff sees the wolf and immediately brings out his stone warrior to kill it. Jayda helps him through the panic attack and escorts him to the medical bay. Isabel offers to help with their patients. Everyone

finds out the breeders were eating the dead to push back the aging process.

-Kenn is told about Tobias and Rico hunting Tonya. Thomas, the Navy man from Kenn's wing in the lab, tells them Rico is Reicher's brother. They warn Safe Haven. Greg considers suicide. Theo saves him while admitting he's been drinking a lot since the explosion on the cruise ship from the overheated wire. Theo can't handle the guilt of everyone being hurt. Greg is carrying the guilt of the lab being blown up.

### **April 17<sup>th</sup>**

-They reach the location of the SOS call and find a very old yacht with no one on it. Everything on the ship is decades old. They decide to stay the night and see if the owners show up. Angela makes the mission men promise not to use their gifts for a few days. Angela figures out she has to hurt them to keep them under control even though she doesn't want to. She gets Harry to have an evolution by Dog growling. Harry uses his new x-ray scan on her pregnancy and doesn't find a heartbeat.

-A storm comes in with a mysterious green cloud that doesn't touch the water. Kyle, Trent, and Zack all have contact with it. The clocks stop working. Theo gets drunk. Marc takes over the bridge so Ray can sleep. Angela takes a nap. When she wakes up, she finds all of the people they rescued using their

gifts or breaking the rules. Marc tells her she has to treat them like Reicher did or just kill them. She punishes them with pain.

-Angela introduces Marc to the pregnancy. Charlie sees it and gets snotty. He's pissed that Marc wanted the reset because he wouldn't exist anymore. Cody uses his new memory gift on Charlie. Angela tells him not to do that in front of anyone anymore, even Marc. Marc goes to get Cate, who is having a nightmare.

### **April 18<sup>th</sup>**

-They go topside and see the yacht next to them now looks brand new. Angela orders them to leave it. They head for Howland Island. Zack sees ghosts on the yacht as it drifts away. Angela locks some of the people who were breaking the rules last night and tells them they'll have to earn her trust. She picks volunteers from the military wing for a security detail.

-Many of the military men are already conspiring to take over the sub. Kyle refuses to let the kids heal his cracks. Biff forces himself to have contact with Dog so he can start conquering his fear. Biff gives Angela the map he stole from the lab.

### **April 19<sup>th</sup>**

-They arrive at Howland Island. Marc is put on point over the sub. Several people are put on guard

over Marc, including Dace, who is using his new invisible shield, and two of the teenagers from the lab who used to guard Reicher.

-The landing team sets up a base camp and then explores the small island. There are only trees in the center and not many of them. They see the remains of a runway and a day beacon. They also see a cat. They take a break and talk to Thomas; he resents female leadership. He admits he was a spy and he loved that job. After the break, they find a hut made of stones that wasn't there before. A woman is nearby who can't remember who she is.

-Adrian warns Greg that Lisa isn't a good match for him. Charlie asks Adrian to look ahead and see if his baby survived. Adrian sees what Marc did and refuses to tell Charlie. Theo gets drunk again. Lisa doesn't want kids and she's now scared of magic. Isabel asks Wade if they can still have their old diet. She's feeling old again and starting to look it. Goldie is becoming obsessed with her.

-Harry figures out the subjects from Reicher's testing wing have worms. Cate tells Harry to save Angela's baby or she'll fry him in his sleep. Three military men from Kenn's wing take Isabel captive and demand access to the bridge of the sub. Dace shoots two of them. Isabel eats the man who grabbed her.

-Zack, Kyle, and Trent have developed a rash from touching the green cloud. The landing team is attacked by a small shark and birds nesting in the tall grass. Angela is having trouble with the pregnancy. Marc uses a sleep spell to knock out everyone who's staying overnight on the sub. The mission men have their own hive now. Marc and the other men go to the island. He makes Isabel and Goldie come along. Adrian and Greg try to scan the mystery woman and get nothing.

### **April 21<sup>st</sup>**

-Angela holds a group session with the mission men. They're supposed to go to the Weigh Station. They end up in Hell instead and have to be pulled out. Dog makes progress with the mission men and with the cat on the island, Mr. Sneaky. Everyone notices how much Angela is like Reicher.

-They're not getting answers when they call Pitcairn now. Wade is promoted to official camp XO. More of the military men are punished for conspiracy to take over. Lisa is now scared of Greg. Erin isn't. She claims Greg. Dog follows the cat around and runs into ghosts. His paw is hurt. Angela hears the baby for the first time. They're all still having visions of a nuclear explosion.

### **April 22<sup>nd</sup>**

-They wake up to find two of the military men have been murdered. They search the mystery woman's

stone hut and find water marks and her journal. Her name is Mel. One of the caretakers are attacked by a bird. Dog uses the bird carcass to finish bonding with Mr. Sneaky. Kenn and Charlie argue about the past. Charlie dreamed about fighting sharks while on land. So did Angela. The descendants notice their gifts seem weaker. Marc uses his sonic gift to scan the sub, reminding them all of Reicher.

-Angela leaves the team on the island while she goes back to the sub for a council meeting and to give Ray a break. They're still not getting an answer when they call Safe Haven. Goldie is following Isabel around. Theo is in the brig. Wade admits he came on this run so he didn't have to help Samantha recover and feel bad every time she flinched or cried.

-Angela starts reading Reicher's log and journal. Goldie hides the murder weapon. Ray mentions he wants kids. Zack and Ray bond. Both of them are afraid of getting married. Kenn calls Ray on being ignored and finds out Ray and Grant are fighting over him. Erin tells Marc about the Eagles making a deal with Adrian to lead them in the final battle with Nature. Marc says they'll handle it in the cage.

### **April 23<sup>rd</sup>**

-Grace, one of the caretakers from the lab, tries to kill Angela for the death of her father, Joel. Piper, one of the Safe Haven rookies, comforts Cody about

his mom. Cody admits he asked the vet to kill her during the earthquake. Goldie overhears it. Adrian makes progress with Cate. She will now be trained to be Cody's body man.

-Marc starts the cage matches. Greg challenges him over Angela and the way he treats her. Greg loses and secures a sympathy bond with Angela because he defended her. Marc admits he wanted Greg to die in the lab. That's why he tricked him into coming along for the run. Harry's gifts are gone. They think Angela did it. Harry says he's going to challenge Morgan when they get home. Biff challenges Kenn over Charlie and the abuse he suffered before the war. Watching the mission men makes Lisa even more sure that magic shouldn't exist.

-Dace is swallowed by a sinkhole. They work together to save him. He and Lisa share a powerful moment that bonds them together forever. They find out no one has gifts right now, not even Angela. Dace has a broken ankle and a new fear of dying.

-Most of the mission men decide to stay in Safe Haven because of the attack on Dace. It was a reminder that Nature won't stop until everyone they love is dead. Everyone starts having moments where they lose their thoughts and have to struggle to remember things. Greg and Erin have sex. He finds out she's a descendant. They make plans to leave Safe Haven and have kids after he recovers.



## **April 25<sup>th</sup>**

-Dace wants Lisa now even though he's in a relationship with Piper. They have the soulmate connection. Lisa refuses to be with him because he's a descendant. Marc collects all the knives from everyone who was on the island at the time of the murders. Dog collapses. Half of the mission men say they're not staying in Safe Haven. Charlie considers going with them. They all tell him no, to spend time with his mother while he can. Everyone knows Angela isn't going to survive the final battle. Harry is investigating the murder. Isabel joins the council meeting to take notes. Isabel asks to be an Eagle. Senior Eagles start doing her interviews. Jayda is given a spot on the council. They hold the law meeting, covering the death penalty.

-Angela sends Harry to the bridge to watch the security tapes so they will have proof of who the murderer is. Mel and Angela are becoming friends. Lisa and Piper talk about needing to protect the normals from the magic users. Piper decides she wants to earn a place on the council so she can do that. Lisa says she is leaving Safe Haven. Angela and the mission men try to dream walk toward home, but it's like Safe Haven isn't there. Trent helps with the kids and figures out he likes caring for them. They find the murder weapon. Theo admits he's broken because they weren't able to do the reset. He still wants his old life back.

## **April 26<sup>th</sup>**

-The council resumes their meeting. Gus and Zack hypothesize that there were four people in the Garden of Eden, not just two. They talk about Cody's bloodline. Angela charms Adrian when he questions her about the pregnancy. Cody does the same to Gus when he witnesses it. Ray calls about a storm on the radar. Angela sees it and orders everyone to get back to the sub. No one answers her.

-She tells Ray he'll need to dive under the storm. She takes a RIB to the island and finds the mission team and their guards wandering around, not knowing who they are or what's happening. There isn't room for all of them in the RIB. Angela loads as many as will fit and sends them back to the sub. She and five others stay on the island as the water rises and the wind increases. It's a typhoon.

-Angela and Wade try to keep the mission men awake while she tries to save them all. Angela anchors them to the trees and gets them into the wetsuits. While the men put anchors into the ground and set up the oxygen tanks, the water continues to rise, washing away their other campsite. On the sub, Adrian is furious with Kyle because he didn't bring Angela back. Kyle goes to the bridge and finds Ray fogged out. He helps wake him up so Ray can take the sub under the water where they'll be safer.

-Harry sees the footage of Goldie hiding the murder weapon. He goes to arrest him. Theo escapes his cell. Kyle talks to Mel. She's also fading. She tells him once you're in, it's very hard to get out. We see Nature laughing at all of them as she observes.

-The land team has to wait out the storm under the water. They are attacked by sea creatures repeatedly, including sharks. They are low on oxygen and very cold. Panic attacks hit them, along with debris that is being shoved through the water by the storm. A shark targets Thomas and attacks him repeatedly. It all makes Angela see she's wrong to want to give up her gifts so she can be normal again.

-On the submarine, Goldie is stalking Isabel. Bret, one of Reicher's personal guards from the lab, saves Isabel and knocks Goldie out. Two of the remaining military men help Harry carry Goldie to the incinerator room. Once there, they disable Harry. The sub is sinking and Ray isn't answering their calls. Adrian and Kyle split up, with Kyle heading to the bridge to make sure Ray is still awake. Adrian goes to the mess to handle the problems there. The sub continues to sink.

-Adrian shocks Theo with an electric baton from the lab. He has broken into the booze and is getting drunk again. Kyle gets into the bridge where Ray is fighting the fog. Erin and Lisa see a ghost while on a patrol of the sub that is now quiet and spooky.

Jayda is taken captive by one of the rebelling military men. He demands to be let into the bridge.

-Under the water on Howland Island, Angela's group is fighting the cold. They see pieces of the ghost yacht rolling through the water. A bait ball of fish comes near them, drawing bigger predators, like killer whales. All of them are having hallucinations from sharing the oxygen and having to hold their breath so much.

-The storm passes and the water slowly starts receding. Marc finally sees Angela is a good leader who suffers with her army. A shark carries Thomas off while the rest of the team is powerless to help him. Their oxygen tank starts to sputter as the killer whales head their way.

-On the submarine, Kyle refuses to open the bridge door. Gus distracts the military men and Isabel attacks them. She's very hungry. Kyle sends her and the other caretakers to find Harry and remove the rest of the rioters. The Eagles figure out if Angela doesn't give the new people a job, then they're unlikely to survive. It's how they can recognize more threats. Everyone finds out Cody didn't lose his gifts at all. They make the connection that Cody is descended from the line that the Creator created with a normal, not his wife. It came from his mother's line.

-Dog is getting better. Adrian is still shocking Theo, at his request now, to make him hate alcohol. Adrian shocks Kyle when he comes in and makes him let the kids heal his cracks. Trent falls over. His rash is now infected and he has a high fever. Kyle's rash is clearing up because he's a hybrid. He's protected from many things and issues. Adrian and Bret talk, revealing that Bret might be Adrian's son, not Reicher's. Biff and Jayda have a strong spark. Ray plays national anthems to help keep everyone awake. They go topside to look at the island and find their missing people. Their gifts return, but Angela doesn't connect to the hive.

-On the island, the water is going down faster. Angela's team surfaces as the water drops enough for them to breathe. Angela sees a hand in the water and pulls. Thomas comes up with it, bleeding heavily and in shock. Both of his legs have been severely injured. The shark that he managed to escape from also surfaces and attacks again. Angela is bitten. She tosses a grenade into the shark's mouth and blows it up. They pack the guts into Thomas's injuries and call for a rescue that is already on the way.

-They figure out soaking in saltwater healed Zack's rash. They use that on Trent. They still haven't heard from Safe Haven. Zack now has a new terror of the water. Wade wants to add therapy skills to his resume. Angela says Ray is going to get his own

team. Angela tells Ray to head for home. She charms Theo so he doesn't remember being an alcoholic. Isabel is officially an Eagle now.

### **May 2<sup>nd</sup>**

-Zack decides to resign from the Eagles. Dace keeps trying to get Lisa's attention. Trent and Wade, who fear the water deeply, decide to form a diving team to help themselves get over it. Wade unlocks Trent's gifts. Angela attends a therapy session. Halfway through it, she puts Adrian to sleep and talks with Bret, who has become her personal guard just like he was for Reicher.

-Everyone's gifts go out again as they reach Pitcairn Island. It's all gone, from the other ships to the dock and tents to the people. Nature watches from a distance, still furious about her broken antler and their survival. This time, she's determined that they will fade away.

# Book 20 Recap

## May 2<sup>nd</sup>

-The landing team is assembled. Shawn starts blinking for a solution. Angela warns them not to run off when they get there. Theo's charm snaps. He wants a drink. Adrian decides to challenge Angela's plan to take over the world because he doesn't want the normals enslaved. Ray uses Occam's Razor to give them the most likely theory. Safe Haven isn't here because they haven't arrived yet. They're in different timelines.

-Safe Haven suddenly blinks into sight around them. They try to make contact but can't. The other flesh-hungry caretakers handle another traitor on the submarine while Isabel is with Angela as her guard. Isabel finds out she is owed a favor because she saved the boss's life. Every time they try to make physical contact, the camp blinks out again. Their gifts return.

-They go to the clifftop so they can keep an eye on the sub while they talk. Wade becomes Cody's first official mentor and trainer. Angela puts the mission men to work diving, blinking, and thinking about how to find the green cloud so they can sail back through it.

## May 5<sup>th</sup>

-Ray asks for a break from watching the sub because he's getting foggy. Then he realizes he's just waking up from the fog. It's been days. He finds several others nearby. They head for town while collecting other members of the team. Adrian calls from the sub. Angela is furious with him, but no one knows why yet. They find Zack naked in a tree. Wade drained himself trying to make contact with Neil and Samantha. Shawn left him that way while he was getting drunk. Wade punches Shawn.

-Marc read a book the entire time. Kenn says he's certain the cloud isn't random. They have to go back to where they sailed through and wait. Angela made contact with Tim, but he refused to believe it was her because of the way Kendle tricked the normals on the cruise ship. Angela switches her team and tells the rest of those on the sub they can come over now. They'll have to see it to believe it.

-Marc and the others find out the people who stayed on the submarine were also fogged. The sub is a mess and people aren't talking. Angela tries a dangerous experiment. Descendants on the sub protect the kids and weaker members. She tries to slow time to get things to pop back into place. Nature tries to kill her. Cody saves her life by shoving her off of the cliff. Greg collects Angela's unconscious body. Cody takes charge of their group and finishes Angela's experiment. They bury a note,



carve Grant's name in a tree, and blow smoke by a camp member to see if anyone notices. They go back to the submarine with Cody leading them.

-Angela hasn't woken up. Theo locks himself in the brig this time so he can't drink. Cody orders Adrian to get the sub moving back to where they first encountered the cloud. Everyone is told Cody is in charge. Cody orders the worm subjects arrested for theft. He tells them to move Angela to the bunkroom so she's surrounded by the people who love her. Marc has Greg do rounds to find out everything that happened on the sub while they were gone.

-Kenn does guard duty over Cate. Shawn is certain that Nature isn't going to let them find the cloud. Piper gives Greg a list of everything that happened. She's been spying. Greg tells her to keep doing it. That's her new job, to spy on the normals even though she is one. Lisa and Dace are being put together. She's still scared of magic. He's scared of not living up to the other Eagles.

-The Eagles reluctantly give Cody updates and start accepting that Angela really left him in charge. Cody tells them it will either be for two days or for two years. Angela wasn't sure. Adrian admits he left the bridge during the fog. Cody stops Marc and the others from beating on Adrian in payment for letting Angela do the cliff experiment. They receive a

distress call from a ship begging for help. Marc says not to stop for it.

-Cody puts the hungry caretakers on patrol and goes to bed. Marc and Greg talk. Greg finds out Adrian is now byzan, against Angela's orders. Greg tells Marc everything. While fogged, Harry and the five caretakers had a lot of private moments. Biff, Trent, and Jayda did too. Lisa protected the normals by hiding them. She brought Dace in too so he would feel safe. Bret and Charlie took care of the kids and babies. Greg dimension hunted. Nature showed up and tried to get permission to enter. Adrian had sex with Piper and ignored Nature's demands.

### **May 9<sup>th</sup>**

-Angela wakes up. Charlie dreams about his son being born. Shawn says he thinks they can get out of limbo with a nuclear blast. They form a shield team to watch over the kids and to make contact with Nature if she comes back. They get another call from a ghost ship and ignore it, thinking it's like the last one they ignored. The submarine slams into a sheet of ice. Kenn saves Cate. Kyle takes a hit in place of Cody. Their gifts go out again.

-Adrian tries to stop Angela from going topside and gets kicked in the face. Three other ships are stuck in the ice around them. One is a pirate ship. One is an oil tanker with oil workers all over the top deck. The third is a small sailboat with two men and a dog

that never stops barking. Angela tells Bret he's not allowed to cut himself anymore. He's been self-correcting because no one is hurting him when he breaks one of Reicher's rules, like asking questions or laughing.

-Ray can't pull the sub out of the ice. They have a quick meeting and decide to shoot their way out. The fog is coming again. People are feeling it. Thomas finds a leak. He gets it fixed temporarily. Ray fires a torpedo and breaks them free. The other stuck ships follow them, also freed now.

-Harry treats Adrian's injuries and makes a deal to tell him a secret about women if he'll draw the tiger back out of his cage. Adrian agrees because Angela wants that old Marc back too. Harry tells him women are about to take over and enslave the men. That's why he wants Marc back, because Marc will stop that from happening.

-Adrian gives Cate a hard lesson about being Cody's body man and forges a bond between her and Marc that will never be broken. They both want Adrian dead more than anything else now. Kenn comforts the little girl, also cementing their bond. Angela tells Dog to hide so he doesn't get shot. The fog sweeps them away. Angela joins Mel in the movie theater.

**May 11<sup>th</sup>**

-The shield team is with the babies and doing therapy sessions. Eagles are in the mess playing poker. Biff is wandering, lost. He knows he's missing someone. Jayda leaves the shield team and joins Biff. The fog takes her too. She offers to share her gifts with him. Marc is reading again. He tosses the book he just finished and goes to the computer, hoping some non-fiction will satisfy him.

-Dace and Lisa are with the normals again, who are not suffering from the fog. Lisa is bonding with Dace now. Dog stays with them. The normal caretakers from the lab discuss taking over the sub. In the medical bay, Adrian and Kyle aren't fogged yet, protected by the painkillers that are wearing off. The fog takes them before they can come up with a plan to stop Harry from removing women from leadership.

### **May 17<sup>th</sup>**

-Two miles from Howland Island. Angela wakes up in the bunkroom. The submarine is stationary and trashed. Adrian tells her the normals want to be dropped off at the nearest landmass or they'll riot. Adrian starts pushing Marc to trigger the tiger. Piper tells Angela that Biff is now a descendant hybrid. Jayda tells Biff she's leaving Safe Haven to go back to America and find her missing family.

-The teenagers from the lab got drunk again. They're taken to the brig. Angela tells Harry to

make corpse stew for his harem of caretakers but refuses to tell him why. She wants a chance at getting his DNA before he dies. Angela finds Zack, naked again, hiding in the rafters of the sub. She welcomes Biff to the hive when he and Jayda tell her what they did. The topside cameras are out on the sub. They know trouble is waiting up there for them. Angela drafts a team.

-Ghost ships around them cheer and watch as they emerge. Some of them attack, wanting the sub while others think the sub people are to blame for the fog. They get the cameras cleared from the duct tape that was put over them to lure a team out. They also collect some of the bodies for intimidation. They head for the location where they encountered the yacht. Marc starts reading Reicher's personal logs.

-Wade gets Shawn into the shower. He's a mess in every way and still very underweight. Harry's harem of caretakers are cleaning the showers. The leader of their pack, Selina, tells them how to handle Shawn. She helps them get him cleaned up. She tells them of a successful blinker who was castrated and still went on to father a lot of kids. It happened with a diet change and determination. She and Shawn come to terms for a future where she helps him recover and he gives her the family she wasn't allowed to have in the lab.

-Adrian gives Isabel her rookie Eagle jacket. They clean the sub, make food, and start getting ready for the next fade while they travel. Angela talks to Mel about leaving her somewhere so she'll be alive even if she is fogged. Mel says no. She wants this to be over. They've become friends. Adrian makes a deal with Cate to protect him and the normals from Angela. Greg and Erin talk about what happens when they get home. Lisa finds out she's pregnant by Greg. Angela sends Adrian in to sit with Marc and help him as he finishes reading Reicher's log.

-Reicher's log details a life-long experiment Reicher did to find out if kids raised out of the lab are different than those in it. He also wanted to know if he could go good. He is Marc's father.

### **May 20<sup>th</sup>**

-They reach the location where they first encountered the ghost yacht and the green cloud. They open the hatch to look around and pirates that have been following attack. A large group makes it into the submarine. Kenn is shot. Greg is stabbed. Harry heals Kenn. Everyone finds out Lisa is pregnant when the baby's magic saves Greg. Angela sends Marc and Adrian topside to clear the rest of the threats. Cody has another good leadership moment. He's getting a lot of practice on this run.

-Thomas checks on the mess and talks to Jack, the only other military man from the lab who is still

alive. Jacks says he wants Angela out of leadership. Thomas refuses to help him and Jack attacks him. Marc finds out about Adrian's deal with Cate and punches Adrian. They find Thomas alive in the mess and figure out it was self-defense. Gus is disappointed he doesn't get to punish him. The caretakers are disappointed they don't get to eat him. Angela tricks Dog into the bridge with Ray and then heads for the theater as the fog takes her.

### **May 21<sup>st</sup>**

-Lisa refuses to join the shield team in the bunkroom. The medical crew goes to the bunkroom. Wade heads for the matchups in the mess, letting the fog take him so he can have a break and some downtime. Ray is already there. No one is on the bridge. Harry also lets the fog take him as he joins his women in the officer's quarters. Cate and Bret start bonding, much to the dismay of those around them. Everyone finds out Reicher was Marc's father.

-Lisa goes to the incinerator room, where the normals have been hiding during each of the fades. She sees Dace is already there, sleeping. The normals grab her and tie her up. They're taking over the ship. Dace was knocked out. They don't trust Lisa now because she saved Greg. Selina is still with Shawn, feeding him the new diet and caring for him. The normals take drugged soup into the mess

and try to get all of the Eagles to eat it. Zack's fear of water kicks in; he leaves to find a high place.

-Selina takes Shawn to the officer's quarters. Trent and Biff have a matchup over Jayda while she encourages it. Trent doesn't want to share her. Half of the normals go to the top level to secure things there. They close the door to the movie theater and lock it to keep Angela inside even though she's fogged. They hit Marc with a knockout dart. Adrian is in the bridge with Dog now, seeing it all happen on the cameras.

-In the bunkroom, the shield team is contacted by Adrian on the intercom. He tells them the normals have taken over the sub. Adrian contacts Selina and Shawn. Instead of going out to help, Selina refuses to leave Shawn, earning Missy's love without knowing it.

-In the mess, the normals start darting anyone who didn't eat the soup. Wade pretends to be knocked out. Lisa gets free and manages to drag Dace to the bunkroom where he'll be safe with the shield team. She heads for the officer's quarters to get Harry so he can help Dace. Harry was drugged. When he won't wake up, Lisa starts strangling him to force him into alertness. Harry wakes up and uses his gifts to push out the drugs. He is furious. He marches out of the room and finds two normals standing there with guns. The normals see how angry Harry is. One



of them accidentally pulls a trigger. Harry saves Lisa's life and loses his own.

-The other normals flee toward the hatch. Dog almost stops them from opening it, but in the end, the huge oil workers from the ship that has been following them get into the sub. Adrian leaves the bridge and flies into the movie theater to get Angela. Kyle makes it into the bridge and shuts the door as the oil workers reach it. The fog is already taking Kyle. The oil workers are mostly insane from being in the fog for so long. They think the people on the submarine can take them home. They're searching for the boss and hurting people as they go.

-The oil workers reach the officer's quarters. Shawn is too fogged to fight. He guides Selina into it. She shows an amazing skill with a gun, clearing the threats as they come in. The shield team in the bunkroom uses clever traps to remove most of the oil workers on the second level. The others go to the mess where Wade challenges them to a matchup. They see his gifts and assume he's the boss. Selina and Shawn keep removing oil workers as they come out of the officer's quarters. They meet up with the shield team in the hallway outside the mess. Shawn lets Selina clear the few remaining threats in the mess that Wade hasn't already killed. Isabel heads to the top level to protect Angela.

-Biff, Trent, and Jayda are taken captive. The oil workers on the top level find Marc and drag him out of the therapy cubby. Isabel gets the hatch shut and locked so the other ghosts around the sub can't get on board. Adrian can't get Angela out of the fog. He finally tells her Marc is about to die. As Angela comes out of the theater, it creates a distraction that lets Selina and Isabel kill the rest of the ghosted oil men. Angela goes back into the theater to finish her movie. We find out she knew Harry was doomed from the minute she sent him on this run.

-They start clearing the sub. The fog is fading for everyone again. Lisa has realized she was wrong. She now wants to stay with Safe Haven, but she has to be punished for stirring up the normals. Cody tells her she'll spend a week in jail and be on probation. Greg and Erin talk about marriage. The other ships around them leave, but they don't go far. The sailboat with the barking dog comes closer. Adrian tells the men he'll try to get Angela to let them join Safe Haven, to follow.

## **May 22<sup>nd</sup>**

-Marc wakes up. We see he and Angela made the plan to handle Harry this way because they weren't going to be able to stop him from hunting power and becoming too strong to stop. Dog and Adrian help Marc see that he can go on even with everything that's happened. Greg tells Kenn he can't leave Safe Haven, that he needs him, that all of the mission

men are going to lean on each other so they'll survive. Wade has survivor's guilt because he didn't go into the lab with the others. Angela comes out of the theater and says she has a crazy, terrible plan that might get them all killed. Everyone cheers.

-Angela invites Nature to come and talk. When she doesn't respond, Angela threatens to blow up Pitcairn. Because everyone knows Angela doesn't bluff, Nature is forced to come. Nature attacks. The Eagles fight back, but they can't get through her shield. Nature burns Shawn. Dog and Mr. Sneaky are frozen by a rebound of Kyle's spell. Nature hits Greg with fire.

-Ray does a dive to throw Nature off balance. Zack is in front of Angela with his rifle, waiting for an opening. Adrian and Trent accidentally merge their spells and rattle Nature's shield. Thomas throws a grenade while the others all attack her at the same time. Her shield goes down. Zack fires three slugs into her leg, the only area he can reach. Nature brings up a new shield and targets Marc.

-Adrian tries to use his alpha draw to force Nature to obey him. Trent steps in front of Adrian as Nature fires back, taking the death spell in full. Jayda uses fire against Nature's shield, forcing her to keep lifting new ones. Nature decides it's time to get serious. Angela pulls the antler piece from her pocket and threatens to crush it. Nature flies toward

her while knocking the others out of the way like they aren't even there. Isabel stands between them in a last defense. Nature throws her into the wall.

-Nature reaches Angela, who triggers the trap. Bret lowers the shield he's been practicing since his rescue. He leaps forward and stabs Nature in the throat, ripping downward as green blood falls over them and the floor. Angela tells Nature to surrender or die.

-Zack fires again, hitting Nature with three more bullets when she again targets Marc. Nature has no choice but to talk now. She lifts a shield and starts healing herself as they begin bargaining. Angela tells Nature she can have the last piece of her missing antler when she lets them go home. Angela broke a part off and buried it on Pitcairn Island. Shawn and Cody give Nature medical care while she and Angela talk. They find out the rules for magic users and that Nature plans to kill the Creator when He comes back for the final battle.

-Adrian makes a deal to fight with Nature in the final battle if she'll stop hunting the normals and protect them from Angela's plan. Nature agrees to send the cloud to them. Angela reveals the truth about Nature, that the Creator's wife possessed her. The real spirit of Nature is a prisoner in her own mind and form.

-Nature sees Cody's lineage and confirms their theory about the Creator cheating. She fires a death spell to kill him. Cate takes the hit for her brother. Cody and the Eagles start firing together and bring down her shield. Adrian steps in front of Nature, protecting her. Angela revokes her permission to be here. Nature threatens to kill them all if Angela breaks their deal and then vanishes.

-The magic users save Cate and Trent while Adrian waits to see if Angela will betray him this time. Angela tells them all it was her idea so Nature will trust Adrian in the final battle. They help their injured people and start taking them all into the bunkroom. Almost everyone has been burnt or impaled, and many of them have broken bones. We find out Kyle was able to take more hits because Jennifer split her power with him. Kyle got the good half. Jennifer got the evil side. Angela decides to keep the submarine for defense. They go topside to watch for the cloud.

-They sail through the green cloud. The other ships that were following them also come through, still trying to get home. Almost all of those people burst into dust or catch fire. They've been in the fog too long to come back. The men in the sailboat with the barking dog survive. Angela says she'll take them in. A few ships sail off toward their homes. Mel and Mr. Sneaky turn into dust. Dog tries to save his cat but can't. He and Angela are both heartbroken.

## **May 24<sup>th</sup>**

-They are almost home. Angela holds a group therapy session where everyone talks about something they lost and something they gained on this run. It's emotional for all of them. Many of the men are planning to resign from the Eagles, including Zack and Kyle. Wade now has the strength to help Samantha recover. The mission men are adjusting to being out of the lab; they're able to see a future now instead of needing to leave so they don't hurt people. Trent resigns from the Eagles to be a den mother. Dace is still unconscious. Lisa realizes she loves him. None of them can heal him. Adrian gets Angela to admit she's still a bit suicidal, like the rest of them, but it's better than it was. She'll never forgive herself for everything the mission men suffered.

-They reach Pitcairn Island and start leaving the submarine. The entire camp is on the hill to welcome them home, except Jennifer. She's not happy they're back. Jennifer doesn't want to give up leadership. The evil side of her magic has been telling her she doesn't have to and she's been listening. Angela acts like she's digging up the last piece of Nature's antler. Nature appears. Angela figures out Nature has been targeting the normals because the Creator cheated on her with one. Nature reveals there were four family lines: Reicher, Roberts, Mitchel, and Wells. Nature leaves.

Angela's team realizes she bluffed Nature. She had the missing antler piece all along. Angela says they're not going back for the final battle. Let them settle their own problems. We're not dying for them.

-Missy and Amy come running. Amy welcomes Wade home, while Missy sees Shawn's memories about Selina. She hugs Selina and welcomes her to their family while Pam watches. Kenn and Tonya are reunited. Tobias is disappointed. Rico is furious. Angela brings up the bubble around the camp. Jennifer storms off, jealous at the reception Angela is getting.

-Grant tells Angela she shouldn't have left Jennifer in charge while she was gone. Angela tells Kyle not to protect Jennifer this time, to rely on his honor or he'll doom her. Kyle realizes he has to give the power back to Jennifer before she turns evil. Still watching them, Nature starts making a plan to pay them all back for the pain they've caused her. It's her number one goal now.

# Book 21 Recap

## May 24<sup>th</sup>

-Tonya and the medics start the exams while camp members and Eagles bring in supplies to the quarantine tent. Shawn helps Tonya ease the panic of the mission men. Tobias uses the small working space as an excuse to touch Tonya and rub against her. Gus calls Brittani on the radio. She's not doing well. Neither is Daryl. The barking dog, Duke, makes the mission men flinch. So does the water, the wind, and having so many people around them. Duke meets the cats and gets scratched.

-Daryl comes in with updates on Jennifer's leadership. While they were gone Jennifer used her enforcer gift in front of the normals and stirred things back up. She used it on Timmy and Stanley. She shut down all party plans and stopped shift trades. She made the normals and magic users sit together for meals. She limits Samantha's time with her sons, saying Sam isn't safe to be alone with them. Eric is furious about his brother being zapped. He mouths off about fighting Jennifer. Angela calls Jennifer to the QZ for updates.

-Tim openly resigns as Angela's spy. Wade and Samantha bond as waves crash onto the shore and scare them both. When Jennifer arrives, the Eagles,



brawler guards, and medics all leave or hide. Everyone is scared of her. The first big bunkhouse in town is finished. They've been taking boat loads of trash and dumping it on Henderson Island. Ralph and Pam are still on conditional release from jail. Jennifer thinks the brawlers are on her side. Angela realizes Jennifer has gathered an army between the brawlers and the church group. Jennifer refuses to take back the other half of her power from Kyle. Angela tells Kyle to stay away from Jennifer and make her jealous. Angela kisses Kyle to get that started.

-Megan, the newest one with that name, steals things and kicks the puppy. Ed sees it. He's an elder in the church group now. Dari, a new rookie, is the camp whore. Hannah, Morgan's girlfriend, has a medical issue she's scared to tell anyone about. Thomas tells Tonya to be careful of Rico, but he doesn't tell her why. The rumor about Marc's parentage starts flying through camp. Sadie and Adrian argue over his cheating. She uses her gifts on him. Jennifer immediately zaps Sadie in punishment. Everyone sees that Jennifer enjoys it. That angers the mission men. Biff brings out his stone warrior, sending shock through the camp and guards.

-Ralph starts conspiring, terrified about the new magic. Pam, drunk, watches them all. She isn't allowed into the QZ to visit Shawn. Morgan and

Missy have been ignoring her. Jayda tells Terry they're not a couple, that she cheated. They have an argument. Angela is unhappy to be home now that they're here. So are most of the mission men.

-Bret asks Tonya to find out who his dad is. He's feeling protective over Adrian now. Bret tells them the final battle with Nature will happen sooner than they planned. Nature tries to tempt Charlie in a dream. He tells Angela he might be leaving to go find his son. Allison tries to find out what happened to Harry. Lisa lets it slip that Harry was hunting power. Leeann shows signs of abuse that everyone misses. Angela refuses to let Jennifer reconnect them all to the hive yet.

-Daryl is avoiding spending time with his wife because he can't stop himself from begging her to end the pregnancy every time he sees her in pain. Angela overrules Jennifer about Samantha keeping her babies overnight. Samantha already knows Cody's destiny. Samantha has evolved and is hiding it from most of the camp. So is Neil. Angela calls a meeting of her female team. Jennifer is not invited. Shawn's medical exam reveals the horror he suffered. Missy starts screaming and won't stop. Her rage is redirected to Pam. Shawn only went on that run to escape the pain of Pam's betrayal.

-Kenn confronts Tobias about putting his hands on Tonya. Then he beats his ass. The mission men stop

Jennifer from punishing him. Samantha finally shows a sign of fighting back. Selina and Missy bond. Stanley notices Isabel. Nature tries to tempt Jennifer. She also tries to tempt Tobias, Terry, Sadie, Rico, and Pam. At the beach, Tim and Ralph are searching for parts of a lifeboat so they can hide it. They're sheltering former camp members in the church bunkhouse.

### **May 25<sup>th</sup>**

-Madison is caring for the camp animals. She makes everyone nervous. They're worried she's like their former vet. Jayda holds a meeting about the trip back to America to find her family. Allison tries to get Lisa to give her more information about Harry's death. Jack, a guard over Dace, reveals that Dace is his little brother. Jack is attracted to Lisa. Angela adds Selina, Piper, Erin, and Isabel to her team. Selina gets her rookie jacket.

-Autumn and Roy say Jennifer's not the same anymore. Kenn and Tonya have a private moment on the beach. Rico sees it. Tonya tells Kenn that Jennifer knows what really happened with Gabe. Debra still wants Theo even though she's with Ian now. Missy and Morgan have bonded again. He makes peace with Shawn. Stanley defends Isabel against Morgan, shocking everyone. Angela tells Biff that Jayda's husband is still alive.

-Kenn asks Tonya about Rico. Tonya says Rico is her guard and a Brady. Without testing, she already knew he was related to Marc. The guards refuse to let Pam into the QZ. Quincy, Brittani's brother, threatens Jennifer. If she doesn't save Brittani, he'll tell everyone what Autumn and the other babies can do. He's bluffing, but she doesn't see it.

-Angela gets out of the QZ early. Jennifer is angry about it. The brawlers declare themselves loyal to Angela, angering Jennifer even more. Jennifer sees Kyle and Angela together and her jealousy grows. She tells them Adrian isn't allowed in town and is ignored. Nature tries to tempt Marc. Angela orders Samantha to move into the bunkhouse. She and her family have been living in Luke's old cabin. Samantha shows more signs of anger and recovery. Missy makes a charmed drawing of Pam. Wade finds out Samantha and Neil are scared of Jennifer because she knows Samantha was a part of the murders of Seth and Becky. Nature tries to tempt Neil.

-At the clinic, Anna has an exam. She tells Terry she's pregnant, but it's not Tobias's baby. Neil forgives Adrian for everything. Adrian asks Tonya to forgive him. He says he'll help her with Jennifer so she doesn't have to leave. Allison tricks Madison into point man duty over the garden crew.

-Angela tells Morgan he is being held responsible for not stopping Jennifer's reign of terror. She says Kyle will handle his punishment and that he disappointed her by not trying to stop Jennifer from going to the dark side. He's humiliated and furious. He shouts at Jennifer and overrules her when she starts to punish Allison and Madison over the garden mess. Hannah sees Morgan's anger and decides not to tell him about her medical issue yet. Jennifer accuses Kyle of cheating on her. Marc agrees to be Jayda's XO for her trip back to America. Missy and Pam argue about Shawn.

### **May 27<sup>th</sup>**

-The teams move into the bunkhouse. It's rough on them to be back around so many people and memories. They keep each other from flipping out. Kyle tells Quincy he has to go to Angela about using the kids to save Brittani. Everyone sees Pam confront Shawn's new woman. Pam is drinking again. She starts to use magic on them. Missy drives her off.

-The mission men and many of the rescue team leave the bunkhouse overnight to find comfort with each other. Angela defends them from Jennifer. Shawn sees mud on Missy's shoes and knows she went out of the bunkhouse overnight. They see Tonya in the barn doing a workout. Rico is nearby guarding her. Conner drains himself trying to help

Candy. Daryl does that every day to help Brittani. Both men are feeling rough and it's not working.

-Marc and Kenn talk to Rico for the first time. Thelma begs Angela to use the kids to save Brittani. Tonya and Rico have a bonding moment in front of Kenn. Kenn tells Angela he doesn't want to be the one to kill Rico. Angela assigns Kenn as the town's new detective. He is now Safe Haven's dick. Lol.

-Kyle and Jennifer have their reunion and have sex. He tries to give her the power back while she's distracted. She slaps him and storms off. Adrian goes to his shack. Piper is there. She figures out why he had the affair with her. She agrees to give him a baby. She loves him and wants a happy family too. Sadie sees them and vows revenge. The church group sneaks down and finds the rest of the lifeboat at the beach. Nature is watching it all. Nature and Jennifer talk. Nature offers to give Jennifer the power to heal almost anything if she'll kill Angela.

### **May 29<sup>th</sup>**

-Pam's body is found. She's been murdered. Tobias tries to get Morgan on his side against Rico. Tonya hears them, finds out what Rico is accused of, and pulls her gun on him. Then she turns the gun on Tobias, figuring out he's the real problem. Daryl interrupts them with the news of Pam's murder. Kenn starts investigating. Shawn and Selina see it and know who's going to be accused. Kenn tracks

the scene back to a bar on the cruise ship's entertainment floor. Missy is arrested. Samantha is assigned as her lawyer.

-Selina tries to trade her favor for saving Angela's life. She wants to take Missy's place in jail. Allison was Pam's friend. She takes it hard, once again reminded that death can happen at any time. They do a medical exam on Missy, looking for proof. Angela subtly heals Missy's only injury. It now looks like she is being framed.

-Angela holds a law council meeting where they decide that the penalty for murder is now death, no matter the age of the person who did it. Terry is added to the council, taking Ralph's seat. The cats start riding Duke like they do with Dog. Angela tells Terry if he can ignore Jayda for three months, they'll be happy together forever. Angela is a month from her due date. Kyle and Timmy plot to force Jennifer to take the rage vaccine. Kyle tells Timmy to spend time with the brawlers so he can recover from Cathy's betrayal and be happy again.

-Debra is a bit lost and trying to find her place in camp. She starts thinking about joining the diving team because she can't hear the water, so she isn't scared of it. Angela officially takes back over leadership now. Marc and Charlie talk. Charlie says he's going on Jayda's run and not coming back until he finds his son. Marc sends a message to Ivan.

Marc's depression is pushing him to leave too and not come back. Angela knows. She tells Adrian if Marc leaves her this time, he isn't going to be allowed to come back.

-Angela is in the beach tent, handling things that people need. Dwight begs her to use their kids to save Brittani. The 4<sup>th</sup> of July is picked as Ray and Grant's wedding date. Ian demands to know why his share of supplies haven't been pulled yet so he, Ed, and Debra can leave. Madison is cleared and her guard removed. She's not like the former vet. She's just very socially awkward. Tobias demands Kenn be arrested for assault, but because Nature healed Tobias, there's no proof of it.

-Jack begs Angela to help Dace, who still hasn't woken up from being attacked on the submarine. Sadie wants Adrian to be punished for cheating. Piper asks for Adrian to be allowed back into their camp. She also wants a place on the law council. Allison is unlocked. She is no longer Invisible. Rico shows up, asking Angela to make Tonya love him. She cuts a deal and tells him to participate in the matchups. Jealous and worried, Jennifer again lets Nature talk to her without alerting anyone. Nature offers the healing gift again. Jennifer demands proof that Nature can be trusted. Nature heals Dace's mind so he will wake up, but not his body.

**May 30<sup>th</sup>**



-Ray is distracted and makes Grant jealous without meaning to. Grant no longer wants to be a magic user because he can't protect the normals if he isn't one. Jack has a spark with Lisa and understands the deal he made with Angela is about her. He has to walk away. Marc stops Bret and Cate from helping Missy escape from jail. Adrian warns Marc not to leave or his marriage will be over. Marc realizes Adrian is still trying to get the tiger out of his cage. Dace wakes up. He doesn't know who Lisa is.

### **May 31<sup>st</sup>**

-Adrian asks Tonya to ground Jayda's run for a medical reason so Marc can't leave. Kenn interrogates Missy and makes her remove the charm on the picture she made of Pam. Gus is having trouble adjusting to not being allowed to punish people like he did in the lab. It's been raining for days now. It's getting muddy and messy. Angela gives Rico a therapy session and a challenge to beat Marc in the matchups.

### **June 1<sup>st</sup>**

-The monthly matchups starts. Sadie challenges Piper and loses. Erin wins her match and show signs of having the rage illness. Dari, the camp whore, has sex with Theo and then goes off with a group of rookies for more. Marc refuses to fight in the matchups. All of the mission men are here watching. Isabel asks Stanley to dance with her. Timmy asks to join the brawlers by punching their leader, Stuart.

He gets his ass beat and is allowed to join them. Allison tricks Jayda into telling her that Harry was almost immortal, so Angela killed him.

-Rico challenges Marc to a match. Pride and anger won't let Marc refuse. Angela stirs them both up by placing her bet on Rico while Tonya bets on Marc. It's a vicious fight where Rico shocks everyone by winning. At the end, Rico stops himself from killing Marc, proving even Reichers can have honor. Then Angela orders the other mission men to fight him. As it progresses, it becomes a training session where Marc joins them and bonds with his uncle.

-Marc and the mission men sit with Rico and talk while Angela drills the camp members through a training session. Ralph and Tim steal supplies for the people they're hiding. Nature makes a deal with Allison. Marc asks Rico to help him change so he can be okay with female leadership. The descendants let their true selves show during the party, making Marc and Rico uncomfortable. Dari is murdered.

## **June 2<sup>nd</sup>**

-Half of the camp is vaccinated against the rage illness. Angela and Kyle keep making Jennifer jealous of their relationship. Adrian hears Angela and Kyle talking about needing him to step up with the camp. He realizes he hasn't been doing enough for them. Dari's body is found. Kenn investigates. It

can't be Missy because she's still in jail. The rookies Dari left with at the matchups are taken to the jail. Samantha is called.

-Alarms go off as a boat approaches the beach. It's Ivan and Tracy. Tracy has Ivan deliver the baby to Angela and they leave. Everyone realizes Marc set it up. Ivan is banished. Jennifer again orders Adrian to stay out of town. Missy is released pending her trial. The camp rallies around Missy and her family now. Ralph accuses Parker, one of the church group, of protecting the magic users. Angela grounds all trips. No one is allowed to leave if they have the rage illness.

-Molly and Thomas bond while shark fishing. Molly is bitten by a shark. Adrian starts making improvements on the town that they need, including bringing water barrels from the ship, along with another generator and a water heater for the showers. Grant warns them of a huge storm coming. It's still raining and very muddy. Tonya finds proof of Missy's guilt and destroys it. Rico and Morgan both know what she did.

-Rico gives them the idea to go to another lab for more of the rage vaccine. Hannah comes in and shows them her medical issue. It's cancer and aggressive. Piper asks Tonya to remove the curse she put on Adrian. Jennifer finds Adrian in town doing improvements and starts to zap him. Kyle

stops her, driving another wedge between them. The Eagles lift Adrian's banishment right there. Ian shows more signs of being a problem. Debra shows signs of wanting to stay and help. Nature and Jennifer have another talk like they've done almost every day since Angela came home.

-Biff saves Madison from a falling tree, finally getting her attention. Ralph accuses Parker of trying to take his place. They suspend the garbage trips to Henderson Island, preventing Tim from sending the broken lifeboat away. He has to keep hiding it. Wade has a panic attack about the water. Angela holds a group therapy session in the barn. Dog says he wants a break this time. She tells him to stay here in the barn with the other animals. Rico sees Angela's anger about how many of the camp are following Tim. The church group is still growing. Rico shows signs of becoming an Eagle.

-Megan, who likes to kick the animals and steal, takes things from people's lockers when they aren't looking. Ed sees it. Bret finds out he's a Mitchel for sure. He and Adrian talk about his new friendship with Cate. Bret shows that he's a true Mitchel at heart. Adrian gets rewarded for his hard work by Angela sending the kids to spend time with him. Kenn and Marc talk. He helps Marc have another epiphany about his relationship.

-Kyle stops Jennifer from interfering with Adrian and the kids. Jennifer tries to arrest Marc for Tracy's kidnapping. Marc uses the rules against her. It's a new loophole for the law council to close. Brittani goes into labor. Isabel tells them to use a sleep spell on her to stop it. Kyle punishes Morgan for letting Jennifer follow her evil side without trying to help her. Dace finds out Lisa is having Greg's baby, not his, and tells her to go away. Charlie names his son Mathew and has Angela give him the alpha blessing. The happy family is the final straw Marc needs. He decides to stay and keep working through his issues.

### **June 3<sup>rd</sup>**

-Ralph tells them Nature tried to recruit him, but no one believes him because of how much he's changed. Tobias's wives show signs of breaking free. Zack is avoiding Allison because of his own issues. He doesn't have time for hers when his take up all of his mind. Morgan talks to Isabel about the lab's cancer treatments. Isabel had experience helping Reicher's scientists. They head for the clinic to start working on a possible treatment. Stanley challenges Morgan when he thinks Isabel is being treated unfairly.

-Gus and Bernice have a spark and a good moment where she asks him to have dinner with her. Theo notices he's preoccupied with sex now, but doesn't know why. Nature tries to tempt Conner. Biff and

Madison eat together. Biff breaks up with Jayda officially. Roy tells Kyle he doesn't think Jennifer loves him anymore. Standing in the rain to listen, Jennifer cries. Nature tries to tempt Kyle. The rain increases as the brunt of the storm arrives. Duke is being poked and hurt by the cats.

### **June 4<sup>th</sup>**

-Ray finds Megan's body. He chases a man in a raincoat from the scene of the crime and loses him in the rain. The camp is locked down for a sloppy search for the killer. Daryl begs Gus to talk to Brittani. Gus tells him it's genetic, that Thelma went through the same issues. He says Brittani should have never gotten pregnant and now she'll die for that choice. The camp starts panicking over yet another murder. Jennifer zaps Allison. Samantha stands up for everyone against Jennifer.

-Tim sees the man in the raincoat enter the church bunkhouse. Tim knows it's one of the men he's been hiding. He confronts him and is knocked out and stuffed into the crawl space. Tim is the only one who knows the crawl space is there.

-Tobias tries to make people think he and Tonya are having an affair so Kenn will snap and get banished. During the search, several couples are caught having sex, including Isabel and Stanley. Kyle goes to check on the creek, worried about how much water is now covering all of their main areas.

Jennifer connects Molly to the hive and finds out she tried to kill Monica during the last matchup. They discover supplies missing. Jennifer asks Morgan if he would kill one person to save four. Nature has been tempting her again.

-Kyle warns Angela there's a flood of water heading for town from the creek. Tonya tells Allison her cancer has come back. Brittani has to be put to sleep again to stop her labor. The camp gets aggressive when the Eagles go to search the church. A bugout to the ship is called.

-Zack and Wade search the church and church bunkhouse. They miss the crawl space. Wade goes to help his family with the evacuation. Zack sees a man in a rainslicker and chases him down into the flooded tunnels under the town. Jennifer's anger is getting out of hand again as she tries to get everyone lined up. Angela orders her to get vaccinated when they reach the ship. Daryl cries and begs Brittani to have the abortion so she doesn't die. Lisa helps Dace get ready while he's yelling at her to go away.

-Angela sends a few kids ahead to make sure Grant and the ship are ready for them, including Missy. They start hearing a pounding noise as they evacuate. It's Tim trying to kick his way through the hatch on the crawl space. A wall of water reaches the town. Ray is looking for their missing people. Zack is under the town, now trapped in the tunnels

as they flood, with the alligators. Ray hears his call for help as the camp flees toward the beach.

-Ed climbs to the cave above the cove and finds Ian there with a stolen stash of supplies. Ian knocks him out. Then Ian is stabbed by a small figure wearing a rainslicker. Now reaching the cove, the camp hears his screams. The brawlers find him and Ed and carry them down to the ship. Angela sends half of the mission men to look for their missing people. They figure out there's someone else on the island with them.

-Eric finds out his dad is missing and panics. So does Allison. Jennifer gets shoved and snaps. She zaps Eric brutally and won't stop. Samantha slaps Jennifer and threatens her place in camp. Everyone around them backs her up. Jennifer storms off, telling them to save themselves this time.

-A wave knocks people off the dock as they're trying to board the ship. Kenn comes back for Tonya this time instead of leaving her to handle it herself like he did in the lab. Lisa tries to save Dace. The panic unlocks his memories and his gifts. Debra saves a camp member. Rico dives in after Tonya. He saves her and the baby, but he's washed out to sea and presumed drowned.

-Jennifer accepts Nature's deal. She is given the power to heal almost anything. She has to kill



Angela in exchange for it. Ray saves Zack. The mission men find them and hear the thuds. They open the hatch right as Tim is drowning. Tim gets his old Eagle gear from the church locker and runs toward the ship, furious.

-The corner of the bunkhouse collapses. Jennifer reaches town, glowing green with her new power. She fires on them. Jennifer is tricked into taking Kyle's power back. Kyle doses her with the rage vaccine in that moment. Then she's shot by Corey, one of the men Tim was hiding. Corey is killed by the mission men. Nature's healing gift saves Jennifer and Kyle. They all run for the ship as the flooding gets worse.

-On the ship, Debra invites Theo to her cabin. Theo tells her Ian was injured. He's not allowed to have visitors. Debra is called to do guard duty over Angela. Wade tells Angela he has too many people on his list of camp members. They have three intruders blending in with the camp. Tim storms in and sees the red rainslickers in the crowd. He tells them the men he gave sanctuary to tried to kill him and then fires. Allison is trimmed. She fires back. Nature's power takes over Allison. She demands to know how Harry died. She snaps and fires at Angela. Debra kills her.

-They flush out the other intruders, who have all made deals with Nature. Anna runs to Adrian and

Tobias sees it. Nature offers him power; he accepts her dangerous deal. He fires green magic at all of them. Terry takes the death spell meant for Angela. Jennifer regains consciousness. She sees Tobias fire and hit Kyle while he's protecting Angela. Jennifer absorbs Tobias's gifts and withers him. Jennifer uses her new healing gift to save Kyle.

-Isabel steps in front of Angela as Martin, another one of the refugees Tim has been hiding, shoots at her. Stanley kills Martin. Jennifer brings Isabel back. Old magic locks Jennifer in place because she broke the deal with Nature. Nature appears to claim the girl. Angela evokes the magic laws.

-Angela says Nature isn't allowed to hurt normals. She can't have Jennifer because Jennifer's unborn son is normal. Samantha is called upon to act as the lawyer. She gets Nature to admit she broke the truce. She's been twisting people up and making deals. She knew Jennifer would be killed and her baby with her, breaking that deal, too. They find out Candy gave Nature permission to be here in exchange for saving Brittani. Nature calls on the others who made deals with her. Candy is one of them. Furious, Conner fires on Nature. Adrian uses a sleep spell on Candy. The three Mitchels fight Nature together.

-Nature tries to slow time, but Samantha has been practicing. She pushes it back. Cate and Cody hit

Nature and blow off one of her hands. Nature consumes the lifeforces of those she made deals with, regenerating herself. Angela holds Nature in place with her shield, forcing her to face the judgement. She offers to spare Nature if she lets Candy and Jennifer out of their deals. With no other choice, Nature agrees. Angela banishes Nature from her own island. Nature vanishes, still bleeding.

-People think Jennifer was mean so she could trick Nature into giving her that gift. Angela doesn't let her tell them the truth. Jennifer starts healing people. Angela says two people lied and hid the killers. Ralph confesses. Tim is charged with multiple counts.

-Angela goes to Tobias, who is too withered to fight. She tells him he's getting no mercy. Daniella tries to protect him. Jennifer unlocks his wives, who've been charmed for decades. Tobias tries one more time and tells everyone that Tonya murdered Gabe. No one believes him because he's been stalking her for months. Daniella shoots him in the head twice, one for each decade she and her sister were held against their will. Hannah cries and says we can't be killed now because of Jennifer's power. Furious, Nature bumps into the ship. It breaks a mirror free and decapitates Hannah on the spot. Jennifer can't heal that.

**June 5<sup>th</sup>**

-Angela makes a rule that enforcers are no longer allowed to share gifts. Jennifer finds out Angela planned it all. Angela tells Jennifer she can't leave the island. Jennifer is grateful. Missy sneaks into her cabin. Selina is there waiting for her. She helps the girl get cleaned up, protecting her. She knows Missy killed Ian and Pam. Jennifer and Angela are outside the door. Jennifer asks why Allison was killed. She's told Allison wasn't going to stop hunting power. Pam was revenge for leaving the boss alone with a killer. All of their kids have the rage illness and the vaccine doesn't work on them. Angela says she's going to show Marc that sharing is better than having full control. Jennifer says if women take over the world, they can protect their men. Angela smiles.

-Jennifer tells Morgan to move in with them, claiming him in friendship that might grow into something more later. Debra confronts Angela about Ian's death. Angela tells her Ian never finished anything he started. He was going to leave her alone out in the wilderness with a baby to care for and they would have died. Debra realizes she's pregnant. Terry's gifts unlock. Kenn interrogates Ralph and Tim.

-They realize magic users can use magic to enslave each other. Anna is pregnant by Harry. Piper again begs for Adrian to be forgiven. Angela says if he can go two months without breaking a rule she'll

consider it. Piper is given a seat on the council. Greg and Erin talk about leaving. They've figured out they're the only ones still alive who know Tonya's secret. Neil and Samantha talk. They've evolved past byzan level now. They're like Angela, seeing almost everything before it happens.

### **June 7<sup>th</sup>**

-Angela takes away the memories of Missy, Shawn, and Selina of what Missy did. Tonya is torn up over Rico. She and Marc bond over that. Samantha asks Angela to forgive Neil. Angela gives him the same deal as Adrian, to go two months without breaking a rule. Molly is in the clear about trying to kill Monica because those matches have no rules, but she is removed from the council for lack of honor.

-The cats are still tormenting Duke. He turns it back on them with licking and poking. He knocks one of them into the pool and Dog hurries to save the cat. The cats swear revenge on Duke. Tonya makes the cats leave them alone. Thomas and Molly start dating. Kyle's gifts unlock. It couldn't happen before because Jennifer had shared hers with him. Angela warns them the next adventure they'll face will be like visiting hell.

-In the deleted scenes we find out Rico is alive and on Henderson Island with Ivan and Tracy.

## **Book 22 Recap**

It has been three weeks since the flood and the fight with Nature on the cruise ship.

### **June 29<sup>th</sup>**

-It's the final day of the trial. Tim and Ralph are found guilty of all charges. Ralph is banished. Tim is sentenced to death. He has one week to put his affairs in order. Angela gives the church group new rules. Tim asks to see Adrian and Neil. Ray is quiet and avoiding everyone. Adrian and Marc have been doing daily rounds together, per Angela's orders. Angela tells Kenn to stay on the island with Tonya or she'll pull her support. He still has dark spots.

-The bunkhouse is being repaired. Brittani and Candy are doing better now thanks to healing sessions from Jennifer's new regeneration gift. Theo finds out Debra is training for the dive team and gets angry. He's staying sober and horny. Ed is interested in Margret, a teenager, but he's scared of her mother. Grant is worried about Ray. Camp women are starting to hound the teenage boys, including Charlie. Eric hates Jennifer and wants a chance to get revenge.

-Jack is hurting over his feelings for Lisa. Dace is hurting over not being able to recover his mobility. Bret tells Angela he thinks Jennifer needs classes

with the camp enforcer. He is talking about Amanda, Margret's mother. Almost no one else knows who, or what, Amanda is. Angela tells Neil it's time to revive his sex life so Samantha can finish recovering. She orders him to get back into full Eagle training. Biff uses his gifts to lift the bunkhouse so they can add supports under it. The camp is thrilled. They adore Biff. Most of them have finally come to realize magic is here to protect and help them.

-Morgan and Jennifer are trying to figure out why Kyle is okay with another man being in her life. Erin admits she didn't take the rage vaccine. She wants to keep the side effects of strength and endurance because she's afraid she can't keep up with the Eagles any other way. Sadie is still pushing for Adrian to be punished for cheating on her with Piper. Many people think that should be a law in their camp. Bernice shows signs of hiding something big.

-Kenn and Jennifer talk. He tells her Greg is still depressed and putting on a great act. So is Morgan, who is in mourning for Hannah. Kenn says they may pop at the same time. Jennifer tells Cate she'll understand women more when she gets a boyfriend. Cate says Joey is her boyfriend. She can't wait to visit him in Hell.

-Candy asks for birth control. Conner shouts at her. He's terrified of getting her pregnant because she had a stroke during her delivery. Jennifer says she'll find out if there's a charm for it. Tonya is missing Rico and refusing to talk about him. Kenn is guarding her like Rico used to do. Terry wants a baby. Isabel tells him about the recovery diet Shawn is on. Charlie gives Conner the idea to get away for a while so he can think. Timmy catches Mike hurting Leeann and tries to stop it. Mike uses magic and his fists on Timmy. Leeann refuses to tell anyone. Timmy mentions Billy, rattling the lock on her memory.

-Marc is doing animal care while observing Madison. He sees a spark between her and Charlie and starts matchmaking. He finds out she's very socially awkward. Madison finds out Neil is the reason people are watching her for problems. Marc promises to help her overcome her fears. Madison responds to him. He reveals that she's a descendant; her gifts just haven't presented yet. He tricks her into attending Angela's team meeting. Marc gets the horse to talk to him. Dog lays down the law to the other animals about hurting people, even something as small as a scratch. He scares them with threats of being split up. Madison reads Marc's mind.

-Angela collects names of women who want to be her team XO while she and Jennifer recover from their deliveries. Tonya has been doing extreme



workouts and is in very good shape now. Lisa is put on a break so she can keep caring for Dace. Isabel is reminded that she still has a favor to cash in for saving Angela's life. Angela tells Samantha she is no longer the camp lawyer, to nominate someone else for the job. Samantha is put back full time on Angela's team. Angela announces Marc and Adrian will share leadership while she's on maternity leave.

-Theo yells at Angela about Debra joining the diving team. Biff names Madison as his student. Angela wants him to teach the gift of conjuring. Bret asks to move in with Adrian. Marc and Adrian talk about Angela's pregnancy. The charm Angela put on Adrian's memory snaps, letting him see how she charmed him on the submarine when he asked her about the pregnancy back then. Marc is getting bored and wishing for action. Three weeks of peace is too much for him.

-The camp women are hounding Charlie constantly. He can't even eat a meal without being bothered. Piper is thinking about being a teacher if she doesn't get the XO spot on Angela's team. Thomas and Molly are thinking about leaving. Panaji is tired of Sadie obsessing over Adrian. They argue. Ed tries to make friends with Amanda, Margret's mother. Amanda doesn't want Ed with Margret, but she thinks Ed can at least protect her. Ed finds out Amanda is Somchai's ex-wife and a Mitchel.

-Gus tries to get Bernice to tell him what she's hiding. Dace wants someone hit him so it might reverse his paralysis. Theo forbids Debra from being on the diving team. Charlie realizes Adrian knows who Amanda really is. Angela has to stop her baby from hurting Kenn. She charms Marc to keep him from finding out the truth about the baby.

-Selina starts wearing green clothes to help trigger Shawn's sexual recovery. He was seriously attracted to Nature. Angela tells Jack to be the private friend Lisa needs. She reveals that she knows he was in prison for murder before the war. Theo and Jack get drunk and pass out in the barn. Tonya senses Kenn is back on Angela's shit list. Angela has Tonya performing XO duties. Tonya tells Sadie she's disappointing the boss, to get back on her Eagle team and try harder. Tonya knows what's coming for the camp next. Angela trusts her to keep it to herself. Adrian tells Candy she'll have to insist with Conner if she wants him to settle down, but not to get pregnant. Mitchels are not allowed to breed without permission.

-Angela and the mission men visit Hell, looking for the next location on the star map. They see old ghosts and find out their most hated enemies are lined up to be sent back with all of their memories and gifts. Joey hates them all now. Joey tells Kenn that Angela has his death planned. They find out the ruler of Hell can only be replaced twice and they've

already reached that limit. Joey gives Cate a bracelet and then kicks them all out.

-Isabel is missing eating flesh because her age is showing and she's afraid Stanley will leave her for someone younger. Cody tells Marc he had a vision of Bret and Cate joining the line of souls to be sent back. Erin and Greg have a spat over the time he's spending around Angela. Angela knows her delivery is coming soon. She tells Greg to spend time with Morgan, that he's depressed too. Angela schedules an appointment to talk to Amanda.

-Angela tells Adrian to get Conner to stop thinking about leaving. He isn't allowed to. More camp women hound Charlie in front of everyone. Wade offers to find him a substitute for Tracy so he'll be left alone. Grant confronts Kenn about Ray and threatens Kenn's place if he doesn't find out what's wrong and fix it. Greg and Morgan talk. They realize all of the founding families have someone from their line in camp. Greg thinks Thomas is a Sinclair and that he's been contacting William. Rico visits Tonya in a dream walk. She thinks it's just a dream.

### **June 30<sup>th</sup>**

-Neil visits Tim in the jail and refuses to help him. Marc sees the power of Angela's unborn baby and figures out she charmed him. He's able to get the baby to settle down when Angela can't. Theo wakes

up in the barn and realizes he got drunk. He starts breaking bottles and is arrested. He hates being normal. Greg gives Erin another ring and makes their commitment official even while knowing it isn't what he wants now.

-Leeann asks Ray about Billy; he refuses to answer. Kenn tries to talk to Ray and gets insults. Morgan asks Kenn to scroll dive for answers about the name curse. Mike tells Marc about radio calls from Australia. Tilly's group has the livestock ready. They want to come visit for a couple of days. Grant warns of another weather mass coming. There hasn't been a drop of rain in three weeks. The jungle is brittle and dying from lack of moisture. Theo is released into Debra's custody.

-Adrian and Bret move in together. Adrian talks to Tim and refuses to help him escape. Greg announces Erin is pregnant. Angela tells Amanda that it's time to take her place in camp or the old warning about dying will still come true. She promises to help Amanda and puts her to work. Jennifer finds out there's another enforcer. She tries to punish the woman and gets zapped herself for the first time. Amanda says she looks forward to teaching her. Jennifer goes straight to Angela to whine.

-Angela holds an Eagle event with a shooting contest and a magic lesson. Biff thinks he and

Madison are a couple. All the adulation from the camp has made Biff think he's more important than most of the other descendants. Thomas loves Marc being in charge. He doesn't want a woman, any woman, to lead the camp.

-Ray tells Grant he's moving out, that he needs some time apart. When Grant presses him, Ray admits he cheated on Grant while they were fogged on the sub, with a woman. The diving team holds their first lesson. Amanda handles her first chore and zaps Theo as a punishment for him getting drunk and causing damage. He has to go through it daily for two weeks. Debra hates her. Word starts spreading that Amanda is a Mitchel.

-The shooting contest is a fun time where we find out Madison's father was a gun runner before the war and so was she. Greg's attitude is rough over having to get married. Kenn shows a sign of regressing. Charlie has a spark with Madison, angering Biff. Samantha participates in the shooting, trying to regain her old confidence. Tonya refuses to talk to Marc about Rico. Marc is trying hard not to find a way to keep leadership, but he's being tempted. Marc tells Adrian to let Kyle win the shooting contest.

-The sailboat men, Ned and Dario, want to help with the ships. Amanda and Jennifer are forced to work together to shield everyone during the magic lesson.

The Eagles know there are a group of hidens conspiring to do something bad, they just don't know who or what it is yet. Bret spies on people to find out. Marc has a spark with Amanda and Madison. Marc knows he needs to love all of their camp to be a good leader. Adrian says he can help with that, but Marc will have to trust him enough to let him in. Marc thinks any woman he's attracted to is trouble.

-Somchai tries to get Angela to banish Amanda. Angela warns him she knows what he's planning. Debra tries to fight Amanda. Amanda uses a jinx spell no one has seen before. Jennifer wishes she could do that. Amanda says it will be her honor, tricking Jennifer into accepting her as a teacher. She tells Jennifer to use her new gift on Debra. Jennifer does, healing Debra's hearing. Amanda invites Debra to talk and hear the sound of her own voice for the first time in her life. The first thing Debra says is, "You're a bitch!"

-Charlie starts teaching kai to Madison. Jennifer tries to heal Laura's nieces. Their tongues were cut off in the lab. Angela puts Dace on the new medical review board. Candy is sent to the restaurant to help with their meals. Angela tells her no birth control and to wait to claim Conner or she'll face charges. The cats react oddly to Jennifer's belly bump. Amanda tells her the child will be a true genius.

-They are clearing out Luke's old cabin to use for honeymoons. The trunk in the crawl space is sent to Marc's cabin on the ship. The workers bump into the floor and knock a lantern over that immediately starts a fire. Adrian, Marc, and Daryl put it out.

### **July 1<sup>st</sup>**

-Theo gets his daily punishment. Kenn tempts Marc into relegating Angela to a den mother after the birth and staying in charge. Kenn is once again terrified about Angela killing him. A clearing team goes down into the tunnels to get the alligators out of there. Sadie shows signs of rage whenever she's around Adrian.

-Eagles are clearing out a damaged dresser and mirror from last night's cabin fire. They hear a call for help as the tunnel collapses, burying Marc and Adrian. Stanley tosses the mirror he's moving and runs to help. The mirror catches the sun and directs it toward the very dry jungle around the cabin.

-They get the gators out of the tunnel. Eric uses the moment to force himself into an evolution, like Harry used to do. Amanda warns them to make sure Eric is never alone with the boss. Marc and Adrian are dug out. Marc saved Adrian and Ed during the collapse. Kenn and Greg silently hope neither man survives. Amanda and Jennifer punish them. Greg is happy about it. Being punished eases his mind.

-Neil and Samantha let Angela know they're like her now. Angela counts and sees there are nine of them, all hiding their wings to keep from stirring up the normals again. Angela sees a blue spark when Piper hugs Adrian, confirming that Adrian broke the no Mitchel breeding rule. In the chaos, Isabel drops a recording device into the pocket of someone Marc suspects of conspiring.

-Morgan yells at Marc over Jennifer's safety. He says Marc isn't fit to lead them. Ed refuses to unlock his gifts. Angela holds a moral board meeting that is interrupted by Samantha. Samantha gives them a list of loopholes that people, including herself, have used to get away with crimes. Angela decides they should handle those first. Morgan quits the council and says he might not be coming back from the next run. Angela tells Gus to find out what Bernice is hiding or the enforcers will do it.

-Mike calls William, who is back in America, on the hidden radio in the garden area and is caught by Leeann. He quickly charms her so she forgets. Mike wants to be the best lurker anyone has ever known. Tryouts for Angela's XO start. Angela has Tonya go first and face every other fighter. Molly confronts Thomas about his secret. He admits he wants Marc to stay in charge. They find out he's related to William, but he didn't know. It can't be him making the calls.



-Marc and Adrian are starting to bond. Marc both hates it and loves it. Angela's labor starts. She doesn't tell anyone. Erin gets the reputation of a cheater for waiting until Tonya has already faced three other challengers in the cage. Tonya wins and becomes the team leader while Angela is on leave. Tonya picks Jayda as her XO. Kenn finds out Tonya is in charge of the run to go find Jayda's family. She starts signing people up for that run. Grant and Morgan are the first two volunteers.

-Work crews are sent to the ships for cleaning and maintenance. Ned and Dario get Grant to convince Angela to let them do duty alone on the smallest pirate ship. Debra's group stays on the runway to clean up the mess from the contests and matches. Somchai is forced to tell them about the South American descendant compound still being active. We find out Adrian got half of the Abbot family banished from there decades ago for murder.

-Tonya helps Kenn put the pieces together about women taking over the world. Jennifer talks to Zack about Eric. She warns him that power hunting will get him killed. Tonya warns Greg that he lost Angela's protection by hoping Marc died in the tunnel collapse. She says he should leave on the next run and not come back. Greg again thinks Angela tried to kill him by sending him to the lab. Marc and Adrian see fog coming through the jungle and realize it's smoke.

-The jungle is on fire around the burning cabin. They know they can't stop it. Sadie barely stops herself from attacking Adrian as her illness grows. As they run to town, a gust of wind carries the sparks in multiple directions. Gus refuses to let Tim and Ralph out of jail to help fight the fire. Gus is the only guard on duty over the prisoners. Tim is trying to find a way to escape. He tells them Parker wants a camp with no rules at all, that he's using the boiling water and the frog method to achieve that goal. The cleanup crew on the runway doesn't know there's a problem. Theo and Debra argue. She tells him Jennifer healed her ears.

-The crew at the clinic keeps working through the radio calls. They are confident that Marc can handle it. Daisey begs Tonya to refuse to take Ralph along on her run so he can't be banished yet. Kenn and Tonya are not connected to the hive right now. They don't want anyone to know they might not be coming back from the next run either.

-Tonya figures out Angela put her and Rico together because Kenn wasn't supposed to make it out of Reicher's lab. Stanley delivers a message from Angela and tells Kenn he's only going to get one more reassurance and then all bets are off the table. Isabel tells them Angela is having trouble with the baby. They realize the fire is all around the clinic and start to run for the tunnels. Tonya demands they

save as much of the medical equipment, books, and files as they can. They have no way to replace most of it.

-Marc and the others are trying to fight the fire around the town to keep it from reaching the buildings. They're using magic and water. They consider a controlled burn and decide to bugout to the ship instead. Marc is afraid of making it worse. Marc sends Kyle to track down their missing people. Marc reveals he can tell what gift any descendant has. Somchai overhears it.

-They start getting people down into the tunnel under town. Sadie attacks Piper. She has reached level two of the rage illness. No one has seen Angela out here helping yet. Adrian goes to find her. Three Eagles are guarding the bathroom door in the bunkhouse. Adrian figures out Angela is in there. He sees she's in labor and calls for Marc.

-Gus evacuates the prisoners from the jail, heading for a tunnel. Radios are not working correctly. The cleanup crew on the runway finally notices there's a problem, but the fire has them cut off from the paths to town. They head toward the creek while looking for a tunnel hatch.

-The clinic is engulfed. Kenn and Tonya get trapped. Trent saves them when the oxygen tanks explode and blow up the building. On the ships,

Jennifer and the others are watching for the camp to arrive. The wind blows sparks onto the ships. They quickly move the boats away from the island.

-Gus can't find the tunnel hatch through the smoke. Four camp kids who snuck out to go swimming hide as Gus and his prisoners go by. In town, Madison refuses to leave the animals. She's going to walk them through the jungle. Biff says he'll go with her. Greg won't go into the tunnel. He's sure Angela isn't going to let him come back out. Marc reminds Greg that he's the one who pushed him into going. He wants Greg dead. They fight.

-The camp finds out Angela is in labor. Angela's baby doesn't like Greg. He deals with the pain to carry her as they start heading away from town. Eric challenges the new enforcer and gets zapped. He still rebels and she locks his gifts. Amanda tells Marc to put Tobias's widows to work. She says widows are like wildcards when they're without their mates; they're reckless and dangerous. Dace has a moment with Lisa where he realizes he can't ever have sex again. Samantha shows more signs of recovery by doing guard duty over Angela. The church group starts singing. Angela's baby reacts violently, making them change the song.

-Debra takes charge of their group when Zack and Theo can't find the creek or a tunnel hatch. She can smell the water. They pass near a cave no one knows

is there except Angela. It's full of silver. Gus is trapped by a falling tree. Ralph helps him. Tim steals Gus's knife, cuts himself free, and runs off. Ralph gets Gus into the tunnel. Kyle sees it all while tracking their missing people. He catches up to Tim and removes him.

-Debra's group reaches the creek. The former couple have been fighting the entire time. They are attacked by an alligator. Theo saves Debra's life. She tells him she's pregnant by Ian and he starts shouting again. Kyle saves them from the alligator this time and leads them to the hatch nearby. Theo and Debra kiss and make up.

-The clinic group is walking through the tunnel. Tonya tells them Angela didn't try to get rid of the mission men but Marc did. He didn't want any survivors, including himself. Part of the tunnel collapses on Trent, hurting his ankle again. Daisey has a heart episode.

-Madison and Biff argue about leaving the animals behind and about her spending time with Charlie. She tells Biff to leave her alone, that any chance they had of dating is gone. She says she can't save him from Marc's plan to remove him. Biff connects that to the lab. He goes into a hatch with the smaller animals while she takes the horse through the jungle. Dog sneaks out and goes on a run of his own.

-On the ships, they're watching the fire and talking while waiting for their friends and family to arrive. Ray finds out Jayda was his mystery partner, done because of a foggy dare from Trent. Missy is trying to figure out how to keep Selina from hurting Kenn. Kenn humiliated Shawn at the shooting contest. Selina wants him to pay for it.

-Cate convinces Grant to fight for his relationship. Bret tells Shawn he wasn't supposed to come back from the lab. Shawn tells Bret he doesn't stand a chance at a future with Cate because Marc won't allow her to be with a Mitchel. Cody gives Angela's burn box to Jennifer. He tells her Kyle will try to stop women from ruling the world, that she'll have to pick between love and that future. He warns her Cate's bracelet lets Joey see and hear everything around her.

## **July 2<sup>nd</sup>**

-Gus and Ralph catch up to the main camp. Gus tells Bernice he can't date her anymore until she comes clean about whatever she's hiding. Camp women are still hounding Charlie. Amanda sends her daughter, Margret, to keep him protected. Margret holds little Mathew to give Charlie a break, while keeping her shield up. It impresses Charlie that she can do both at the same time. They have a short bonding moment. Ed recognizes it and knows Amanda did it on purpose to put her daughter with someone her own age. He isn't that disappointed.

He's just lonely and didn't spark with anyone else. Amanda tries to change her destiny by accepting Ed's friendship.

-Erin breaks up with Greg and tells him to go back to his owner. Greg looks at Lisa, who sneers in contempt. He's alone now. Mike tricks those around him into denying the use of cameras to watch the people running the radios. Angela's baby shields her during the birth, refusing to let Greg near her. The other babies all wake and start crying. Darkness starts covering the land. Karleen Elizabeth Brady is born in the tunnel with the camp around her and Marc at her side. The baby attacks Samantha. Adrian blesses the child and the feeling of evil starts to fade. Angela passes out as an internal injury threatens her life. The baby heals her.

-Angela tells them four kids are missing. Biff catches up to the camp. Charlie notices Madison isn't with him. He and Biff argue. Charlie wants to go find her, but he doesn't argue when Marc tells him to stay with his son. Amanda is impressed with Charlie. She has already decided he will make a good son-in-law. Charlie tells everyone to stop pushing him toward a new relationship. He says they have to go through his mom if they're skanks and his dad if they're good girls. Margret goes to walk with Marc and provide protection, declaring her interest in Charlie officially. Biff is disrespectful again and Charlie hits him with a new energy drain

spell. Amanda's youngest daughter, Alicia, also punishes Biff. She enjoys it. She has no conscience.

-Kenn's group catches up to the camp now. Tonya picks up the newborn and offers a verbal correction when the baby sends pain. People are shocked when the baby responds. Tonya says her own son often needs a firm hand. She and Angela talk about a match between their kids in the future. They also talk about matching Samantha's sons with Candy's daughters.

-Tonya tells Samantha the baby sensed her secrets. The baby doesn't like to be touched by anyone but Angela so far. Marc gets Kenn back on his side by thanking him for the bugout from the mountain. Marc now understands how hard it is to keep a camp together during a crisis. Kyle catches up, bringing Debra's group. He's sent right back out to find the missing kids.

-Madison finds the missing kids near the beach path and helps them out of a tree as the fire rages around them. She gets the horse to carry them by telling the horse he'll be a hero and Angela will never make him leave. She also conjures for the first time, producing a ladder. They head for the beach. Kyle saw it all. He joins them for the rest of the walk to the shore.



-There's a fire in the tunnel. Marc finds the beach hatch and goes up, but the topside fire is too close to get all of the camp out before it reaches the hatch. Marc decides to do a controlled burn. He has to rely on Adrian to help him direct his gifts. They work on it while the camp comes out of the tunnel and flees toward the dock.

-A falling tree injures Marc's ankle. There have been a lot of ankle injuries. A lot of weak or hurt people have to be carried up the ladder, along with all of the kids. In the chaos, Somchai and his small group are able to get into position. Somchai takes the baby while Bo and Renard bring up shields over Angela and Marc. They want the submarine and for everyone to be taken to the nearest lab. Somchai misses the lab, but he also wants to use their gifts for his other goal of taking over the world and ruling everyone in it.

-The mission men, Dog, and Adrian surround Somchai. Amanda leads the charge when the others refuse to fire out of fear of hurting the baby. Little Karleen helps when Somchai doesn't obey her order to be put down. Marc takes Bo's lifeforce. Angela takes Renard's lifeforce, healing the internal injury again enough to stop from bleeding to death. We find out Somchai was the mastermind behind the murder of Adrian's mother. Dog and Neil keep the baby from being hurt when Somchai lets go of her. Dog bites through Somchai's ankle while Marc

shoots him in the stomach. Then Adrian consumes him. Stuart retrieves the recording device Isabel dropped into Somchai's pocket.

-Marc is horrified by all of the mistakes he's made. Amanda is drawn to Marc. She walks away, proving a Mitchel can have honor. Neil tells him Angela has made mistakes too, that it's hard to be a leader. Neil asks if Marc is going to save Adrian again from his mistake in challenging Angela. He doesn't answer. Clicking noises are coming from the water around the ship. The ship crews see green gas that fades away. Kyle comes through the smoke with Madison and the kids. A tree branch falls. Madison saves Kyle and earns Jennifer's gratitude. She decides to match Madison with Morgan.

-Marc stops the camp at the dock and calls out the other hidens who knew about Somchai's plan. Two of them are church members. One is an older den mother. Gus uses his favor to ask Angela to lift Ralph's banishment. Then he quits as the jailer. He wants to be a lawyer. They all listen to the recording and find out the normals were going to be killed and all magic users would be put into the lab. Marc and the mission men take the lifeforces of the hidens in front of everyone, making it clear what will happen to traitors from now on. The camp cheers, proud of Marc. They think he's done a good job even though he doesn't.

-Stanley bumps into people crossing the dock and triggers a chain reaction that knocks Bernice into the ocean. Gus and Parker dive in and help her. Everyone sees her webbed fingers. She's a water hybrid. So is Parker. The church group hid it for him. Bernice hates being different. Her family has been careful to only have children with normals in hopes that they can breed it out.

-Selina offers Kenn a drink from her canteen. Missy knocks it away before he can consume any of it, covering the action with meanness. She tells Selina not to risk their happy life together ever again. Amanda realizes Kyle's clock is ticking. Jennifer knows. She's saved his life more times than anyone else's. They understand that's why Kyle brought Morgan into their lives. He wants his family to be taken care of after he's gone.

-The mission men surround Marc for an accounting of what they've figured out. He admits he tried to kill them all to end some of Safe Haven's problems by removing the problem people. Kenn and Neil defend him, along with Kyle. Because Marc is the leader of Safe Haven right now, his punishment has to wait until he isn't in charge anymore. Marc has finally figured out it's better to share leadership. We find out Amanda is Adrian's sister.

**July 3<sup>rd</sup>**

-The clicking noises around the ship are louder now, but they can't see anything through the fog. The island is still burning. Ray punches Trent. Ray and Grant make peace and decide to stay together. Kenn figures out Tonya knew the fire was going to happen. Sadie has the rage illness. She sees Greg's flare up and says he has it too. Because Greg is sleeping with Erin, he was able to be reinfected. Greg wants to go on Tonya's run and find the cure so he can save his child. If Erin flips out, she won't make it to her due date.

-Anna, helping with medial paperwork, points out how many duplicate names of the dead there are. Marc sends her and Morgan off to work on it while also matchmaking them. The medics tell Marc Angela needs an operation to keep her from getting pregnant again. She should have died. Kenn tells Tonya to stop thinking about living somewhere else. Safe Haven is their home.

-Adrian and Marc talk while he sorts through the trunk in his cabin. He finds a picture of Kendle. Marc admits he saved Adrian because he's gotten used to having him around. He thanks Adrian for always helping him through the messes he creates. They aren't at war anymore. Adrian tells Marc what rule he broke to challenge the magic laws. Marc says he needs a miracle. Adrian tells him that's why I came to you.

-Margret and Charlie have a flirting moment and maybe the start of something special. Samantha, Neil, and Wade resume their physical relationship for the first time since before she was kidnapped. Biff and Madison argue over not training any more conjurers. She's now a little scared of Biff. We find out she really wants Marc, but she'll settle for Charlie. Madison and Margret scare Charlie off by talking about the future.

-Marc tells Adrian that Ned and Dario died from accidentally releasing the green gas on the pirate ship. They couldn't escape the green cloud. Selina admits she tried to poison Kenn. The favor she has from saving Angela's life saves hers now. Tonya doesn't know about it yet, though. Tonya and Kenn talk about getting married. Mike runs in and tells Marc they're getting calls from all over the world. William, Tilly, and even soldiers who've seen the fire on the satellites now think Safe Haven is gone.

-Marc says it's time to go quiet and let their remaining enemies believe they're dead. All radios are to be handed over and locked up unless they belong to senior Eagles. He reassigns Mike to a different job. Now Mike can't contact William anymore without being caught. Zack sees a look between Mike and Leeann that reminds him of his own past. Zack threatens to hurt Mike if he lays a hand on Leeann. Zack vows to never leave them alone again.

## **July 4<sup>th</sup>**

-The fog starts clearing. They see hordes of turtles on the beach and in the water, coming here to lay their eggs. It also starts raining, putting out the rest of the fires. Now that the greenage has been burnt away, they can see the cliff cave is threaded with deep veins of silver. Marc and the baby bond. Jennifer delivers orders to Bret, who is now officially a rookie. He has to arrest his father.

-Rico and Angela are dream walking toward the cave that no one could reach because of the jungle covering it. We find out Angela plans to reunite Rico and Tonya at some point. She kept Kenn alive in case Charlie followed in his footsteps, so she might be able to duplicate Kenn's reformation to save her son. Angela helps Rico adjust to his emotions, something he's refused to have for most of his life so it couldn't be used against him. She tells him to learn how to love all children, starting with hers. Rico and little Karleen have a bonding moment where he teaches her to shield herself so she doesn't lash out when affected by someone else's emotions. Rico accepts Angela as his alpha.

-Marc is following them. He is thrilled that his uncle is still alive. Neil, Samantha, and others appear around Marc, also following the alpha. Charlie is there too. The others open their wings, showing they've all evolved to that next level.

-Angela knows they're all following. She tells Rico they need more fighters for the final battle. Conner appears, also evolved. He tells her to talk to Adrian. Adrian and Dog have been working on a plan to draw in lost souls.

-Angela forces herself awake and finishes the talk with Dog so the others won't know her plans. She's still trying to save Adrian's life and she's not putting the normals first this time. She's tired of her kind always dying for them.

# Place a Review

Reviews are one of the biggest ways that readers can help their favorite authors, or warn their fellow readers! Reviews do not have to be long. Just let the world know how the book made you feel while you were reading it, and maybe who you think would enjoy that type of story. To place one on this book, [take this link to my website page](#) and pick the store of your choice. Thank you, really. Reviews mean a lot.



# **Audiobooks**

Did you know the Life After War series is available in audiobook format? Perfect for road trips and times when you need your hands and eyes on something else!

[\*\*Audiobook Page\*\*](#)